00060508

THE
ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BOMBAY
Town Hall, Bombay.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018

TEN YEARS IN SARÁWAK.

BY

CHARLES BROOKE,

TUAN-MUDA OF SARÁWAK.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION

60508 a

BY H.H. THE RAJAH SIR JAMES BROOKE.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS.

LONDON:
TINSLEY BROTHERS, 18, CATHERINE ST., STRAND,
1866.

[*The Right of Translation is reserved.*]

919.11
Bro/Ten
60508

LONDON:
BRADBURY, EVANS, AND CO., PRINTERS, WHITEFRIARS.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

Naval profession—Departure from England—Primitive life—First impressions—"Dido's" visit—Appearance of Saráwak—Surrounding scenery—Exposure to sun—Result—Climate—Moonlight—First discomforts—Snakes—Complaints—Visit to Lundu—The Dyaks—Ascent of mountain—Chinese gardens—Pitiful story—Visit to Sakarang—Mr. Brereton's fort—Saribus—The Orang Kaya—Malay disposition—Expedition against the Chinese—Their humble bearing—Erection of fort—The Quop river—Departure for Lundu—Arrival—Kindness of Dyaks—Death of Lee—His character—Disastrous attack on the Dyak enemy—Walks in Lundu—Dyak anecdote—Appointment to Lingga—Ferocity of alligator 1

CHAPTER II.

Chart—Vocabulary—Position—Boundaries—Malays—Land Dyaks—Derivation of word—Locality—Hindooism—Sea Dyaks—Number—Localities—Languages—Customs—Theories—Origins—Dyak religion—Code—Omens—Future state—Suicide—Instances—Maladies—Longevity—Calculation of time—Padi farming—Crops—Administration of justice—Albinoes, Menangs, or soothsayers—Epithets of surprise—Extraordinary practices—Maias, their instinct—Fallacious ideas—What occasioned by—Dimensions of Maias—Female characteristics—Appearance, behaviour, &c.—Jealousy—Fourth division—Malanau—Localities—Names of branches

PAGE
—Practices—Human sacrifice—Character—Cannibalism—Cure of sick—Absurd ceremony—Burials—Provision for future life—Inhabitants—From whence arrived—Suppositions—Position of country—China—Gradual change—Articles of value—General migration from the north—The Chinese—Their qualities—Capabilities 43

CHAPTER III.

Lingga—Situation and population—Alligators—Manner of catching—Excursion to interior—Tabooed river—Fish poisoning—Venomous ants—Discomfort—Dyak reception—Doctoring—Bad government—Old ladies—Inveterate talkers—Dyak impetuosity—Man wounded—Superstition—Deer-snaring—Trip to Sibuyau—Night walk—Thorns—Maias' habits—Tabarong conference—Contradictory reports—Enemies and half-friends—Second trip to Sibuyau—Evil spirits—Scenery—Gamang—Initiation—Monkey killed—Saribus Dyaks' depredations—Dandi expedition—Pa Dendang—River dangers—Sakarang—Dyak custom—Requisition—Visit to Dyak homes—Inland march—Difficult walking—Halt—Conference—Division of force—Panic—Confusion—Return—Wounded men—Enemy's chivalry—Dead failure—Attack on Bugau Dyaks—Captives—Their behaviour—Sungei Lang expedition—Conference—Advance—Engagement—Victory—Return—Fatal sickness—Death of friend—Solitary abode—Dyak custom—Deaths by Saribus Dyaks—Old ladies—Their power—Malpractices—Complaints—Relief of afflicted—Shocking conduct—Trial of strength—Quiet resignation 87

CHAPTER IV.

Sakarang—First Dyak case—Dyak memory—Letters—Sandom's occupation—His stealth—Alarm—Craving for head hunting—Mode of stoppage—Collection of heads—Punishment—Aing's value—Reducing a Dyak to reason—Quarrel and life taken—Heavy fine—Its efficacious result—Dyak peccadillo—

PAGE

The father suffers for the daughter—Grave decision—Assault of alligator—Superstitious modes—Feasts—Mukah massacre—Ruins—Braiun—Amicable encounter—Soliloquy—A peace concluded—Sarikei Fort—Fever and ague—Dyak social economy—Female sinners—Murders at Kaluka—Visit of young ladies—An insects' nest—Preparation for inland attack—Kajulan expedition—Conference—Unlucky accident—Stoppage of communication—Journal of incidents—Rapids—Dilatoriness—Council of war—Dyak devils—An unpleasant friend—Our march—Old jungles—Bivouac—Native kindliness—Continued old jungles—Retreat of enemy—Vacated houses—Burning of houses—Plunder—Dangerous incident—Devastation completed—Homeward march—An alarm—Unpleasant spectacle—Sadji's vaunt—Return home—Dyak conversion to Islamism—Arrival of Chinese gold workers—Caves—Accident—Orang Kaya's grief—Dyak observations . 136

CHAPTER V.

Braiun—Visitors—Summoned to Saráwak—Small-pox—Rough journey—Conversation with friend—Our adventures—Pleasure on arrival—Speedy return—Stunning report—Departure—Europeans at Lingga wounded—Departure for Saráwak—Meet the Rajah—Appearance of things—Useless apprehensions—The enemy's flight—Their extreme distress—A panic—My return to Sakarang—Dyak head-taking—Pursuit—Night watching and pulling—Quick return—Alligator's grip—Wonderful recovery—Expedition to Sadok—Sandom again—Ascent of Sakarang river—Scenes—Confidence of Dyaks—Communings—Council of war—Land march—Sight of Sadok—Sudden fresh—Ascent of mountain—First alarm—Second ditto—Wounded and killed—Night quarters—Summit—Iron anchor—Fortify our position—Parties foray below—Enemy in rear—State of camp—Continued rain—Our last attack and failure—Obliged to descend—Enemy's yelling—Reach boats—Disasters of ditto—Our descent and troubles—Safe arrival at home 204

CHAPTER VI.

PAGE

Turtles—Their eggs—Trip — Cholera — Superstition — Saribus—Balla—Intended excursion—Defeat of ditto—Advance to Padeh—Burning of houses—Cholera—Building of fort—Fitz Cruickshank left in charge—Dyak decapitation — Fiendish proceeding—Reach Sakarang—Mode of life—Dyak interest—Saribus again—Startling reports—Attack—Loss of enemy—Mr. Watson's arrival—Meet Saribus Malays—Conference—My return—Preparations for another attack—Ascent of Saribus—Laborious work—Encounter — Death of Sadji—Good riddance—Further ascent—Our bivouac—Fortifications—Inland march—Steepness of mountains—Remarks on marching—Fatigue—Re-enter camp—Wounded Dyak—Start for Sadok—Mortar—Extreme heat—Ascent of mountain—Result of mortar firing—Our killed and wounded—The enemy's coolness and vaunt—Our failure and descent—Burial of dead—Reach boats — Downward journey — Sandom's advice—Result of expedition—Undercurrents—Remarks on the style of life—Agricultural intentions, &c.—Unforeseen occurrences—Disappointment 264

CHAPTER VII.

Visit to Rejang—Kanowit—Steele's escapes—Isolated position—Slave-born followers—Mukah—Mathusein's position—Difficulties—Dispersion of his enemy's forts—Fine demanded—Mathusein released—Proximity of Seriff Massahore—Trade restored—Return—Saribus head-hunting—Punishments—Messrs. Fox and Steele murdered—Deep conspiracy—Cogitations—Suspicions—Council of war—Expedition to Rejang—Abang Ali's good faith—Summary treatment at Sarikei—Gang of murderers—Seriff Massahore's visit—Armed followers—Execution of fortmen—Kanowit—Sad sight—Ruins—New fort—Council of war—Dyak attack—Their failure—Our advance march—Enemy's position—Firing—Attempt to save lives—Assault—Dyak daring—Dreadful conflagration—Loss of life—Poisoned arrows—Deadly effects—Return—Lintong

PAGE
—Difficulties with friends—Visit to Seriff Massahore—Return to Saráwak—Prosperity—Datu Hadji—His banishment—Europeans armed—Conspiracy—Extra watch and barring in—The bore in Batang Lupar—Dyak lady's affection—Lela Pelawan—His wisdom—Dyak fortmen—Absurd customs—Dyak hero-worship—Marriage proceedings, Christian and Mahomedan 325

ERRATA.

For "Abong," in one or two places, *read* "Abang."
For "Fitze," in one or two places, *read* "Fitz."
For "Mudah," passim, *read* "Muda."

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

PAGE

THE TUAN-MUDA'S RESIDENCE . . . . *Frontispiece*

MAP OF SARÁWAK 1

SARÁWAK RIVER SCENERY 105

DYAK BRIDGE AND ABODE 220

PLAN OF FORTIFICATIONS IN MUKAH IN THE ATTACK ON PANGERAN MATHUSEIN'S HOUSE BY PANGERAN NIPAH 332

ATTACK ON KABAH, 1859 348

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

I HAVE been requested by the publishers to affix a few prefatory remarks to my nephew's book upon Saráwak, and having read the sheets as they were passing through the press I willingly do so. Its defects I leave others to discover; I do not coincide in all his opinions, nor do I agree with many of his theories; but the simple and truthful narrative of his adventures as the leader of the wild and numerous Dyak tribes, will interest many readers as it has interested me.

He is looked up to in that country as the chief of all the Sea Dyaks, and his intimate knowledge of their language, their customs, their feelings, and their habits far exceeds that of any other person. His task has been successfully accomplished, of trampling out the last efforts of the piratical Malayan chiefs, and their supporters amongst the Dyaks of Saribus, and of the

other countries he has described. He first gained over a portion of these Dyaks to the cause of order, and then used them as his instruments in the same cause, to restrain their countrymen. The result has been that the coast of Saráwak is as safe to the trader as the coast of England, and that an unarmed man could traverse the country without let or hindrance. It is a gratification to me to acknowledge my nephew's devotion to the cause to which my own life has been devoted. It is well that his strength has come to supply my weakness, and that his energies and his life (if needed) should be given to establish the governorship and promote the happiness of the people of Saráwak. My career draws on to its close, but I have confidence that no consideration will turn him from the work which I shall leave for his hand to do. Did I know him less I should praise him more, and I consult his feelings rather than my own in not pursuing the theme.

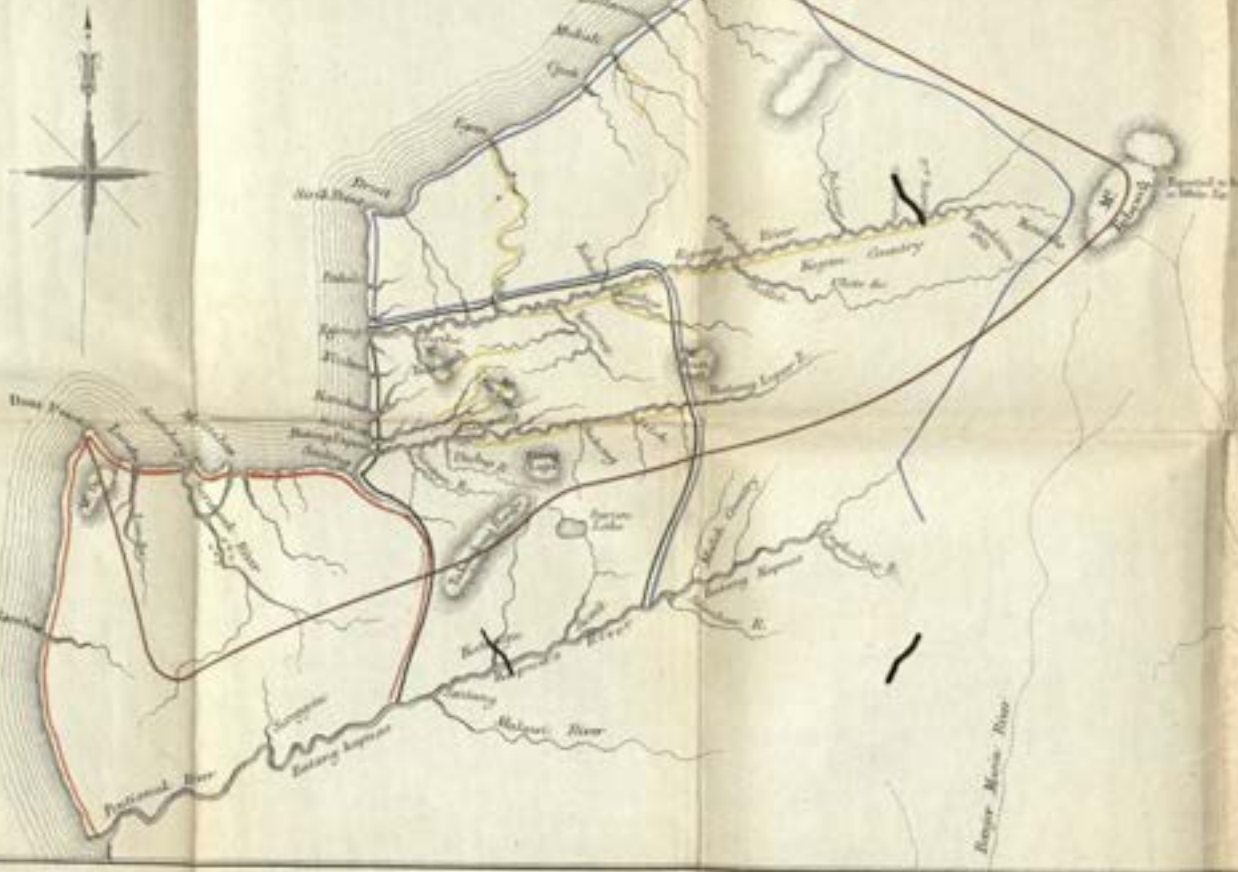
I once had a day-dream of advancing the Malayan race by enforcing order and establishing self-government among them; and I dreamed, too, that my native country would derive the benefit of position,

influence, and commerce, without the responsibilities from which she shrinks. But the dream ended with the first waking reality, and I found how true it is, that nations are like men; that the young hope more than they fear, and that the old fear more than they hope—that England had ceased to be enterprising, and could not look forward to obtaining great ends by small means, perseveringly applied, and that the dependencies are not now regarded as a field of outlay, to yield abundant national returns, but as a source of wasteful expenditure, to be wholly cut off. The cost ultimately "may verify an old adage, and some day England may wake from her dream of disastrous economy," as I have awakened from my dream of extended usefulness. I trust the consequences may not be more hurtful to her than they have been to me.

Since this I have found happiness in advancing the happiness of my people, who, whatever may be their faults, have been true to me and mine through good report and evil report, through prosperity and through misfortune.

The principle of the Government of Saráwak is to rule for the people and with the people, and to teach

MAP
TO BROOKE'S TEN YEARS IN
SARAWAK.



Published by Tinsley Bros. 18, Catherine St., Strand.

TEN YEARS IN SARÁWAK.

CHAPTER I.

1852-3.

Naval profession—Departure from England—Primitive life—First impressions—"Dido's" visit—Appearance of Saráwak—Surrounding scenery—Exposure to sun—Result—Climate—Moonlight—First discomforts—Snakes—Complaints—Visit to Lundu—The Dyaks—Ascent of mountain—Chinese gardens—Pitiful story—Visit to Sakarang—Mr. Brereton's fort—Saribus—The Orang Kaya—Malay disposition—Expedition against the Chinese—Their humble bearing—Erection of fort—The Quop river—Departure for Lundu—Arrival—Kindness of Dyaks—Death of Lee—His character—Disastrous attack on the Dyak enemy—Walks in Lundu—Dyak anecdote—Appointment to Lingga—Ferocity of alligator.

I ENTERED the Royal Navy when a little over twelve years of age, and after ten years' service applied for my discharge, but owing to the kind influence of Captain (now Admiral) Sir James Hope, I gained my lieutenant's step, and was subsequently able to obtain from the Admiralty two years leave of absence, to try my fortunes in Borneo. At the end of

the leave, I finally quitted the service, though had circumstances obliged me to remain another year, in all probability the Russian War would have altered my ideas and prospects for life. I had only seen active service in Keppell's expeditions, and in Admiral Sir T. Cochrane's squadron in these seas, against the pirates of the northern coast of Borneo.

I consider the navy particularly useful as a preparatory school for adventurers seeking their fortunes in the world,—more especially in the primitive parts of it; for there is little doubt after the life aboard ship, any discomforts subsequently experienced are lightly felt, and roughing ashore is made easy. Besides, the naval education combines a little soldiering, a knowledge of the artillery drill, and the management of guns, as well as skill in matters directly nautical. One acquires also some idea of carpentering, and last, but not least, an eye for management and order.

I bade adieu to my loving friends in England, and reached Saráwak on the 21st day of July, 1852, a day which is always labelled in my mind as an unusually important date.

The European habits at that remote period of the young state, may be pictured as exceedingly primitive. On my landing in the afternoon, I met two officers

occupying high positions, walking about without shoes or stockings, and their apparel dripping wet and far from tidy, as they had just returned from a pulling excursion in a leaky boat. The next morning I was offered an axe to cut down trees, or a ride on the two mile road. I preferred the latter, as riding was always a favourite amusement of mine; besides, an old maxim had been instilled into me, "never to do hard work when you can find easy." I visited my friends after they had been cutting with all their strength for some hours, and found they had then *almost* severed a tree of the hardest quality and of gigantic dimensions. They were in a melting perspiration, and did not look comfortable until they had recruited themselves with great quantities of cocoa-nut water. When we sat down to breakfast at midday, there were some four or five natives around, talking all the while.

My first visit to Saráwak had been in the year 1844, in the "Dido," commanded by the Hon. Captain (now Admiral) Sir Henry Keppell, who did good service in quelling piracy on the coast, and made some inland excursions against the Sakarang Dyaks and Malays. In one of these expeditions I accompanied, as a small midshipman. The war steamer anchored off the point on which subsequently I lived for so many years. I of course had little idea at that time how

events would resolve themselves, and that my future abode was to be on those muddy banks abreast of where the steamer lay.

The natives have a clear recollection of those days when they say, "The fire-ship came and fired at us, and nothing could stand against her." However, their remembrance of this does not bear any malice with it, and they talk of it now as a matter of history, from which they invariably date their epochs and periods. The "Dido's" name and her captain's bravery are still vividly known and recounted in their stories.

On looking round, I was pleased to see so many improvements since the "Dido's" visit. The Rajah's house was a capacious bungalow on the left bank of the river, with smaller ones attached to either end. The former was used as the public apartment, and the latter as private sitting and bed rooms. The site was picturesquely chosen, and had been occupied by the Brunei Rajahs in former times, who had their cemetery in the background, with the graves marked by iron-wood monuments, and covered at the top with pebbly shingle.

The bungalow was on a low hill, with a small stream on each side pouring into the main river. The garden around was principally planted with rows of

betel-nut trees, and here and there were straggling cocoa-nuts. But flowers were scant, excepting some fine jessamine bushes on each side of the approach to the house. The turf was poor, and much mixed with a long, coarse, yellow weed, which is pernicious to the growth of any other cultivation, until the wiry roots are eradicated. A short distance below the Rajah's bungalow was the dwelling of another European gentleman; and these two were the only residences on the left bank. On the opposite side, the Chinese town stood, consisting of a dilapidated row of houses by the side of a marshy road; however, of late years the houses have been renewed, as well as the road, and much increased in the number of shops and buildings.

The bishop's house stood on a hill at the back, and a little further off was the church, a pretty building, and well adapted for its purposes in this country, both as to size and description of architecture. Mr. Crookshank's villa (since burnt by the Chinese rebels) was just completed on an elevation, and there was another small cottage, belonging to the Manager of the Borneo Company Limited; and this was all, except a stockaded place called a fort, with guns mounted, commanding a long reach of the river, and a court-house on the upper side of the bazaar. Besides these build-

ings, the Malay villages extended along the river's bank above. I have known strangers admire them, or perhaps more particularly the colour, which makes a good picture. But my own taste (after European beauty and regularity) did not appreciate such simple erections; and strangers or visitors are certain to be disappointed when they expect to find any beauty in native architecture.

However, if we turn from the abodes to the grandeur of the scenery, with vegetation luxurious to excess, and behold the grand mountains which rise some miles at the back of Saráwak, and view the many picturesquely-shaped hills situated near, then it is that one cannot fail to admire the magnificent natural landscape, the peculiarity of which is its ever-changing appearance, alternating in colours of radiancy and gloom, as the weather varies. A noble mountain, of about 2800 feet in height, named Matang, stands in the back-ground. In consequence of the rarefied state of the atmosphere at times, it is so clear and transparent that this mountain appears within a mile, showing the outline of the jungle trees distinctly; at other times, its distance looks about ten, which it is in reality. In the former instance, depend on it, rain will fall within a few hours, accompanied by a brisk squall, and in the latter there is none approaching.

In one case there is a superabounding amount of electricity, in which state a collapse must ensue; in the other, the elements are equipoised, and objects appear in their proper form. In the hot monsoon, when the heat is excessive, squalls are nearly of daily occurrence, at most times coming on at 2 p.m. They are often attended with the most vivid lightning, of a very dangerous character, and accidents not unfrequently happen. After these squalls, which seldom last more than an hour, the sun again shines forth, and in the course of a short time the ground is dry, and the atmosphere rendered excessively delightful by the cool cleansing and washing it has undergone; in fact, it has been filtered of its impurities. These rains keep off sickness and oppressive symptoms, which in sultry weather attack the head, relax the nerves, and weaken the constitution. The desire that many of the youthful community show, of proving the stability of their skulls by exposure to the sun's rays, is a sad mistake; for it ends by a foul condition of the liver, as well as other maladies, which in most cases oblige people speedily to seek shelter in a cooler climate. The head is easily guarded, and it should be a man's duty to take particular care of this most important piece of furniture, the injury of which leaves the individual to occupy such a mediocre position among his

fellow-creatures; and Heaven knows we all go quick enough, without wantonly laying ourselves open by extra exposure to natural evils. No white man's brain can undergo the process of being stewed in an oven. I have known no cases where people have actually fallen by a stroke of the sun, as I believe so often takes place in India; but *our* sun is as hot as it well can be, being in latitude one degree north. Its ill effects are proved in other ways, after some years of exposure.

Acclimatisation never, so far as I have seen or heard, permits one to go heedless in this excessive heat; and by a parity of reasoning, no acclimatisation in a cold region would permit one to lie down to rest on a snowy bed without extra clothing, without sad and perhaps deadly effects ensuing.

The strength of head also considerably depends on the state of the stomach, and if the latter be out of order—weak from insufficient food, or otherwise—the brain soon whirls when exposed to the sun's rays, the eye glistens, and a man comes to a stop, much weakened and appetiteless, knowing himself to be helpless until he takes rest, and prepares himself more efficiently for an undertaking.

Excitement and energy will effect much, but will fail unless due regard be paid to the vulgar region of

an individual, for *in it* lies the main stay; and trebly wise was that old German steward who carefully carried Lord Raglan's luncheon out, amidst derision and laughter, on the battle-field in the Crimea.

After the rainy season we experience the most delightful weather, as the coolness of the earth produces an elastic and exhilarating climate: but the heat of the sun is *always* oppressive, and is only compensated by the cool evenings and mornings, which are so truly enjoyable, both for the scenery and the renovating effect produced on health and spirits. I remember reading, a short while since, a work which stated the wet season in Borneo to be eight months in every year, and describing the saddening effect it must have on the feelings of the inhabitants. It cannot be denied that rain in abundance does fall here, although not to that extent; but let the most depressed soul behold a few evenings of fine weather, with the bright moon, and it repays him for a year's gloominess—whether in consequence of superexcellent beauty, or by the contrast, I will not venture to specify; but that it is so is certain, for the most grumbling of dispositions cannot deny the loveliness of such an evening, with pictures such as Turner could only attempt to imitate. The moon in her first quarter descending and shedding her beams with sparkling radiancy over

the ripples on the river: the habitations on each bank dimly picture indistinct outlines through the haze; high mountains are in the background—dark, grand, and clearer, being more removed from the fog which clings to the earth. Behind the villages are hills of various shapes and sizes, with their reflection in the river, contrasting with the dark and severer material of Mother Earth with her various elevations, and ever-abounding phases of change, the outlines of which are softened by the haze. On such a night both sights and sounds gladden the heart, for all classes are contributing a sympathetic merriness of voice to the bright orb. Malay boys pull about, or drift lazily with the tide, and strain to emit the highest falsetto note, regardless of time or tune, for the feeling purely is an internal satisfaction, and not intended to produce pleasure to the community. The Chinese and Klings all have their different methods of enjoyment on such a night; and if we listen to the animals—the dogs are baying with stentorian lungs, cocks crowing, with other thousands of chirps and hisses from the smaller specimens of animal life. These are sounds of gratitude as well as pleasure, and are consequent to a bright moon, a happy country, and a delicious climate, the latter contributing the major part towards such feelings.

Most men on their first arrival in the country are troubled with the bites of musquitoes, and other pestiferous insects, which are often exceedingly poisonous and painful to new blood from a cold country. And if the person be not careful of such wounds, he is likely to suffer much inconvenience, and be laid up by these bites; but a little care in the first instance will generally cure such complaints.

We are not so troubled with flies as in many other countries; but small insects, as ants, are innumerable, and in shade and damp congregate so as to give great annoyance, obliging all articles that have a pleasant perfume, to be surrounded by water, in order to keep these insects away. These creatures also attack eatables, and many are swallowed, I believe; but after all, what the eye does not see, the heart does not grieve over.

We have snakes in abundance, and the palsied horror that is attached to their name in the imagination before arriving in these parts, soon vanishes after being brought in contact with them. The species are very numerous, each combining certain degrees of venom; but it is my belief that not more on an average than one kind out of ten will cause death, and bites from the greater number are scarcely attended with any ailment.

The natives, nevertheless, have considerable fear of them; at the same time they have a superstitious dread in hurting some of the most venomous, and will allow them to remain unharmed about their premises, and even sometimes about their persons. The cobra is very gentle and harmless, and will not make an attack unless surrounded, or chased without any chance of escape.

I have seen a dog pass its nose along the back of one, when the snake quietly crawled away without showing anger, and I have known men step over them accidentally without their showing signs of raising their hoods. In the event of their being hurt in any way, they will attempt to bite, but the slightest stroke with a stick over their back breaks the vertebræ and stops their progress.

The less venomous are often more inclined to show signs of ferocity, and will sometimes make an attack on an animal or man. Before I had been three months in the country, my servant, while making my bed just after I had risen, found coiled away under my pillow a small snake, which was afterwards kept in the collection of a friend. It was of a cream colour, about three feet in length, and said to be venomous. Shortly afterwards, as I was in preparation for bathing at the mouth of this river, and sitting

on a rock, something fell from a lofty tree above my head, grazed my arm, and dropped at my feet. It proved to be a large snake about six feet long; he was somewhat stunned, but recovered in less than a minute, and made off.

On another occasion I found one morning a cobra had left his skin hanging on the window-sill of my bungalow at Lingga, and of course many of these reptiles are met in all places and seasons by any traveller in these parts; I must confess that I cannot call to mind any one instance in which their bite has caused death, though several cases have come under my observation. The natives say that the bite of some of the worst would not allow sufficient time for a person to divest himself of his jacket before he breathed his last. They consider a beautiful pea-green snake the most dangerous, generally about six feet long, with a dragon-shaped head, and about four inches of the tail resembles a bit of dry stick, hence it derives its name "mati puchok," or "dead pointed." The marks by which snakes may be known to be venomous are—a flat dragon-shaped head, and more particularly a body terminating abruptly, with the addition of a small tail: those which gradually taper to a fine end are seldom poisonous to any great degree.

Europeans here frequently suffer from cutaneous complaints, which are not in reality serious or permanent, but are exceedingly annoying, and often difficult to cure. It is thought that many of these maladies will cease when the country is drained and cleared of old jungles, the density of which causes a continual dampness and malaria about the earth. After acclimatisation one loses European complaints, to be exchanged for the fever and ague and other sicknesses rendering the constitution liable to the prevailing epidemics of this country.

Shortly after arriving in Saráwak, I paid Lundu a visit, calling at the different places lying on our way. It is nearly fifty miles distant by water, and on our arrival there we took up our quarters in the Orang Kaya's house, which was in fact a long village in itself, containing fifty families under one roof. Their rooms are all separate in the back partition; the front is open, and used partly as a passage and roomy space in which the people of the house receive their visitors, and here they sit nearly all day, unless they are at meals, or sick, when they retire into privacy. Their goods are kept inside, and the apartments are considered sacred to a certain extent, and no one but relations or intimate friends would dare open the doors.

We took up our quarters under the superintendence of the Orang Kaya in the outer part, a portion of which he partitioned off with mats, for the purpose of allowing us a retreat from the many eyes, and in order to keep the dogs away. Before we had been there long, the people brought their little presents, and pretty-looking laughing damsels were congregated in a dense mass around our circle.

I lounged out to recall some of the scenes which I had kept in my memory's store since our last visit, now nearly seven years ago, in the "Samarang's" boats, and I well recollected the spot where we had moored. There also was the identical point off which we had, in our monkeyish midshipman's days, been swamped; and then again I called to mind the last Dyak to whom I remember bowing adieu; he stood on this landing-place, with his handsome face smiling and his flowing hair overspreading his shoulders, as he presented the Rajah with a white fowl, a peace-offering and token of fidelity to him.

In the evening the Orang Kaya sat near, and conversed, but as yet I could understand only very little of what they said, so satisfied myself with using my eyes and ears for all going on.

The next morning we ascended a mountain of between two and three thousand feet in height; on its

side a noble waterfall gushed over large boulders of rock, and in one place poured into a basin about thirty feet in depth. We rested and bathed here; the water was delightfully cold, almost too much so, for when I commenced to walk again, I found the cramp had seized my muscles so as to cause me much inconvenience, and only by the greatest exertion could I persuade my legs to extend themselves; but my walking had never been prodigious, and I always preferred riding or driving to such a useless amusement.

The jungle here was grand and imposing; some of the trees were of gigantic proportions, and the ground was open, being free of underwood in consequence of the shade from the large trees. In returning home we passed through Chinese gardens spreading over many hundreds of acres, containing the sweet potato in large quantities, with which they supply the coast. A variety of vegetables and sugar-cane were growing plentifully, and I was struck with delight in witnessing the tasteful laying-out of these gardens; in fact, I believe, so far as kitchen-garden produce is concerned, the Chinese have a wonderful knack of making the most of a bit of ground, and of planting it so that the lines shall be beautifully brought round the rising curves of undulating lands. This struck me more particularly, because their eyes are so extremely crooked when devis-

ing house building or wooden architecture. Before starting for our walk to the mount, the Orang Kaya gave his sons, who were fine handsome young fellows, particular instructions to follow and take every care of us. There was a strong superstitious feeling about Antus (spirits) frequenting the locality of the waterfall, but on the assurance of our possessing powder and shot, the old chief seemed satisfied, and permitted his sons, as he styled us all, to proceed. We sat late the evening after this walk, and the Orang Kaya related his many adventures with his enemies, particularly the Saribus Dyaks, of whom he spoke with the utmost contempt and hatred, clenching his teeth and hands, with his overhanging brows pinched together, when naming them.

The morning after, we rose early, and proceeded about two miles up the river to a landing-place in a small branch stream, where there was a single Malay house. We stopped here to prepare ourselves for a march, and the owner slowly and shyly showed us civility, but he evidently did not feel at his ease, and was surprised at seeing Europeans, who, he imagined, had come for no good purpose. His little family were playing about, and more attractive and beautiful children it would be difficult to meet in any part of the globe; their bright black eyes were spying at us; as they

passed to and fro, their youthfulness prevented irregular features from being prominently noticed. This was a Sambas man, who had removed from the Dutch rule in consequence of a war being carried on against a Chinese town, named Montrado, where the enemy, by all reports, were making a determined resistance. This Malay was evidently happy in his seclusion, living on what fish he could catch in the river, and on a scratch farm of padi, to which the female part of his family attended. On starting with my companion, I inquired where our path lay, and was pointed to a large space of newly felled trees, and nothing could be more unlike a highway or byway. We set off, and had to thread our way over log after log, lying long and crosswise; in fact, it was an introduction to a new style of walking, resembling tight-rope manœuvring more than any other. Some of these trees were six or eight feet above ground, when a fall would have proved a serious matter. I soon, however, found I was not a worse hand at it than my neighbours. A steady and cool nerve and eye are required for such work. For a few hundred yards of this uninteresting labour, we seldom spoke, and could never lift the eye away from our steps.

We then entered the old jungle, and proceeded at a steady four-mile jaunt, conversing on the various

objects we were passing. So far as I could judge, the distance we went was about eight miles, through large fruit trees nearly the whole way. A small house of a Dyak lay before us on a hill, with only the roof distinguishable, the lower part being secluded from view by betel-nut trees, plantations, and brushwood. As we approached this domicile, the old chief came to receive us with a smiling amiable countenance; their mats were spread, on which we reclined after having enjoyed a bath from a cold mountain stream. This is the remains of a very old tribe which numbered many thousands in former generations, but now were dwindled away to twelve families. The old man, as well as his followers, gave us this piteous news with tears in their eyes, and recounted the brave deeds of their forefathers, who were able to muster many hundred fighting men. They told us their women refused to fructify, and wished to know what could be done to remedy such an evil; yet there appeared no signs of physical decay among them. Few had more than one child, and many were barren. We condoled with the poor remnants, but our advice of intermixture was, I fear, cast to the winds, as it was nearly beyond their power to effect any change. On returning, one of our party fell upon a fallen tree and severely bruised himself. After this we returned to Saráwak, and I

found the trip had done me much good, and felt myself fast falling into the manners and customs of Europeans in these parts. I never ceased studying the language, and for four or five hours daily was engaged in learning separate words, which some kind friend would hear me repeat; besides which, I carried on imaginary conversations with myself or surrounding objects. Grammatical study in such a language as Malay is time thrown away, and the best plan one can adopt is merely to acquire the phraseology and tongue, by gaining word for word out of a dictionary, and from the mouths of people, and for this purpose it is necessary to carry a pocket-book on all occasions.

One day H.M.S. "Conquest," of 12 guns, arrived; commanded by the Hon. Captain Spenser. I believe their object was to afford assistance to the Sarawak Government in quelling piracy on the coast. There had been a visit to Sakarang and Saribus in contemplation for some months; and taking advantage of the presence of the man-of-war, the preparations for the excursion were immediately set in motion. Our two pinnaces were manned, one by the man-of-war's men, and the other by our own people, and, accompanied by one of the ship's boats, we started, and arrived at Lingga on the second day. While

anchored there, some vague reports reached us that the station at Sakarang, which is fifty miles up the river, commanded by Mr. Brereton, was in an unsettled state, in consequence of some refractory natives having broken out in rebellion. We pushed on without a moment's delay, and found Mr. Brereton fully armed, and prepared for all emergencies; but according to the several statements, matters were now quiet, and there was no cause for alarm or anxiety. We reached his fort at 7 p.m. The building was brilliantly lighted up, and presented more the appearance of a ball-room than a fort *in the distance.* On our landing, bolts, gates, and obstacles of various descriptions were relaxed for our admission, and many sentinels with rough appearance lined the way with loaded arms. Inside, there were long lines of natives, mostly Dyaks, looking darker in contrast to the bright lights and whitewashed walls. The chief "Gassing" came forward and shook hands with me; and as this old gentleman will appear repeatedly in the following pages, I will not tire readers now in delineating any particulars of him; but first impressions are always valuable, though often incorrect. I admired these fellows from my heart, and sighed for the time when I should be better able to know them, and have charge of such a district. Brereton's story was as follows:—

Some badly-disposed Malays had been trying to lead the Dyaks to act against the Government, but there was a large party around him well armed, and the only point was to guard against treachery. The day after, the inhabitants were assembled, and recommended to be more careful, both for the maintenance of the Government under which they now live, and for their own welfare, as government and subject must live or fall together. Some of this party spoke a few words, and then they all took leave.

This place is situated on a dead flat, which is covered with water when the rains cause freshes to run in the river. Some distant mountains were in sight, but there was not an elevation within many miles, and the surrounding country is a deep swamp. We remained here only one day, during which we lounged about or slept. There is little to be seen, except native groups in all directions; tumble-down sheds formed a Chinese bazaar, and the other part of the village was inhabited by Malays. Before bidding the Dyaks adieu, beads were distributed among the ladies, who numbered about thirty, and had come to pay their respects. They were very joysome lasses; and on the captain of the man-of-war offering to give one (more pretty than the rest) a passage to England, she immediately said she was ready to go anywhere

with him, and to all appearance she would not have required much persuasion. The division of beads was made fairly between young and old, notwithstanding strong predilections in favour of the younger and prettier. After which we bid farewell. Salutes were fired, and we shoved off, leaving Mr. Brereton, the solitary European, among his half-naked companions. The first glimpse of the life was peculiarly attractive to me, although I believe most people would have felt a horror in the thought of such isolation from their countrymen.

After embarking at Lingga, we proceeded to Saribus, which is the next river, and after a few hours' of the pleasantest sailing by the side of each other, singing songs and conversing as each vessel glided along with the fresh land breeze, we reached the mouth of Saribus, up which we proceeded for forty miles, when we arrived at a Malay village. The natives recommended placing our vessels on the mud bank to be out of reach of the bore, and after arranging to do so, the chief sent his sons and people to assist us. They were a fine set of fellows, and their athletic and active forms surprised us all. Stripped to short trousers, they plunged through the mud above the knee; carrying long pieces of wood down the bank, they arranged them so as to make a

bridge, on which we might go on shore, and in two hours their work was completed. The party had been especially merry all the while, throwing at each other, and laughing as the most happy of mortals only could. They walked in the sloppy mud with the same ease as we could trudge on dry land, and no stick seemed too small for their sensitive feet and toes to grasp in walking. The name of this village was Boling. It was situated on a dead swamp, without any appearance of dry ground around, and without a drain of any description. The principal object of our visit was to persuade the population of Malays and Dyaks to make peace with the Lingga tribe, and to collect the Malays on one locality, instead of allowing them to live scattered about, as they felt inclined. This was intended as a primary step to leading them to a better system of government amongst themselves. In the course of the day, the Dyak chief, Orang Kaya Pamancha, came aboard, and having often heard his name as being one of the most troublesome of head hunters, I was surprised in meeting a very old, decrepit, and mutilated man, dressed in the worst habiliments. He took a seat on the deck, and remained silently looking down. His eyesight was nearly gone ; and when told that the white man had come to pay him a visit, and hoped that his news was good, his only answer—which

he drawled out significantly — was, "Ragus" (very good). As for making peace, he said he was too old, but that he would send some of his younger chiefs as his representatives, after farming season. He then requested to be allowed to go for heads, as, he said, his wife had lately departed this life, and he was consequently in mourning, which he wanted to *open*. On this being denied, he turned sullenly round and left. Another chief of a tribe near came aboard, named Lingir—a short man, of most perfect symmetry, serpent-eyed, with the strong savage pictured in his physiognomy. While he sat on the deck, I could not keep my eye off his countenance, for there was peculiar character lurking underneath the twinkle of that sharp eye—avarice, cunning, foresight, and prudence, all within so small a compass. This man, I was told, had attempted to take the Rajah's life in Saráwak; but the news of his audacious scheme spread its shadow before it in time, and he was at the nick of time confronted by a superior force, before which he and his armed party slunk off home again. After meeting the Malay chiefs in a hall of audience where many minor details were discussed, *apparently* in a friendly spirit, we left this hotbed of anarchy and bad customs.

When we had been in Saráwak a few days, there arose a serious dispute between the up-river Land

Dyaks and the Chinese gold-workers, in consequence of the former having cut away a gold-working dam and let the water out which the Chinese intended using to drain the gold from their different ditches worked for this purpose. On our arrival at the place, we were surprised to find the Orang Kaya with a following of more than a hundred armed men, who each held a bundle of spears ready for any hostile encounter. The business was discussed, and the Dyaks were found to be in fault; they were accordingly fined and cautioned, and also had to defray damages.

After these short excursions, we spent many quiet weeks in Saráwak, being only once broken in upon by our taking a short trip to Si Munjan, in the Sadong district, where we had some jungle walking in a deep swamp, that in many places had roots which were running along the surface, and seemed to form the only terra firma.

Some parties of Dyaks paid a visit to the senior officer, and while squatting down around us, they presented some cocoa-nuts, which they requested might be spat upon. The ceremony was performed in due form. They then carried off the nuts to their farms, cut them in pieces, and scattered them over the ground, to ensure a plentiful harvest next year by this appeasal of the spirits. One evening while riding with my brother, a

native came hastily up to request our attendance on his son, who, he said, was mad. On entering the house we found the young man in his mother's embrace, swooning in a fit, which they thought to be an approach to death. His pulse had almost gone, and his body as cold as any stone. After being there about ten minutes he revived, and soon entered into conversation with us; but he looked fiendish, as if something was preying upon his mind. This we found to be the case, as some gay Lothario had lately robbed him of his intended bride. Such causes in most instances lead to the Malay amoking (running a-muck). The disposition of a Malay broods over such an injury until it suddenly unfolds itself in desperate acts. This youth had fortunately kind parents and relatives who were around to ameliorate his grief and watch him.

November.—I was directed to keep a guard one evening on the upper part of the town, to cut off all communication with the inhabitants up the river. The gold-working Chinese had offered resistance to a government officer while in the execution of his duty in apprehending a criminal among their Kousi, or company. The culprit was concealed and protected by the principal Chinese in that district, who had more than once before been turbulent and rebellious. The authorities in Saráwak now deter-

mined to punish them with a strong hand, and an extra watch was kept in the different ways, and on public buildings in Saráwak, until a force had started up the river, the greater part of which were in small canoes. And on the following morning we arrived at the Chinese landing-place, where previously a few mercantile men had come for the purpose of warning the Chinese of an approaching force, and to recommend them to succumb and deliver up the culprit. When first receiving intelligence of the prompt proceedings against them, the Chinese leaders were prostrated with fear. They made their appearance, offering the most humble obeisance. The culprit was forthwith given up, and a conference was held in company with all the principal chiefs, before whom the Chinese were arraigned, and sentenced to build a fortification and provide the necessary expenses of arms, ammunition, and wages of fortmen. The first site chosen was a hill overlooking the Company's house and works; but after deliberation the place was changed to Berlidah, which commands the river, but is distant from the gold-workers about ten miles. These Chinese are strongly armed with abundance of munitions of war, which have been steadily accumulating for years, their excuse being, that they required such an armament to hold their own against Dyaks.

The fort was to be built on the identical spot which

the Rajah had attacked on his first arrival in the country. It was now covered with young jungle, but at that time was defended by the Saráwak Malays against the Brunei rajahs, who failed to make any impression on such a fastness. While clearing the ground, we found many holes which had been dug after the system of native warfare. These holes are scattered in different places around a fortification, covered only by small wood as a blind, and on an attacking party advancing and stepping into these holes, a sharp spear planted at the bottom either wounds or kills.

Besides these, we traced the old embankments, and many of our followers now were the principal leaders here formerly. They fought their battles over again, and the old Tumanggong, as he surveyed the different spots, drew his sword, yelled, and gave a few steps of his war-dance. The fort was soon completed, and the cutting down and clearing around opened a large space for musketry to command. The hill was too precipitous for an attacking force to attempt to mount it, and around its foot wound the river. Upon the land side an extra row of palings was erected, and I suppose the whole was something of the same kind, only not so formidable, as the pahs of New Zealand. Gates were hung, with spikes on the outer side, to pull

up or let down, after which a guard was left, and the post was placed under the command of Seriff Moksein. When we returned, I was disappointed to find that a demand for a hundred stand of muskets of the Chinese offenders was relinquished, for what need had they for such a large number of arms and munitions of war? They cannot again be trusted, as what has already been attempted—it is reasonable to suppose—will be attempted again when any other lull or occasion offers itself, and when they are even better prepared, as the punishment dealt to them has in no way weakened their power. It is a fault to be too severe; but either the one course or the other should be adopted, forgiveness or punishment.*

December, 1852.—Our next trip was up a branch of the Saráwak river, named Quop. Our purpose was to search for coal, as some had been reported in that vicinity; but after a long walk we only found some black stuff which might become coal in future generations. Our walk was of the roughest description, and the thorns were perplexing, both of various-sized rattans and of a smaller palm. My hands were much torn when I arrived at the boat, and as yet I did not admire Bornean jungle-trudging, although I fully ap-

* Copy from journal kept at that time. The remarks are unusually prophetic; witness what occurred in 1857.

preciated the wild and beautiful scenery. We passed some Dyak houses, and were followed by a few guides who were good specimens of the inhabitants. Their skins were about the colour of a new saddle, their features not good but pleasing, with raven black hair flowing down the back.

This tribe of Dyaks has suffered much from the depredations of the Saribus and Sakarangs. We took up our abode for the night in a small Malay hut. The inmates did everything in their power to make us comfortable; but they were poor, and were employed in getting the sweet, aromatic, scented, oily Garu wood, which the natives are very fond of using about their persons, and it fetches a good price in the market. We passed, in the course of our walk to-day, a small plaited basket of viands swinging on a tree, containing rice, salt, and other uninviting condiments. They were placed there in consequence of a chief's wife being sick, and intended as an appeasal to the Antus.

On our return to Saráwak, we found a boy only sixteen years old had amoked in the town. He first of all, without any apparent reason, seized a sword and sprang on his mother, whom he cut most severely, and leaving her for dead, he passed on to three others, whom he wounded in various ways, and then decamped

as fast as he could go into the jungle. The poor mother's life is despaired of. The boy was looked on as being half silly for years, but never violent. The inhabitants are now all armed, and ready to meet him if he appears, when in all probability he will be cut down, and nothing more thought of it.

January, 1853.—After having dispatched my luggage by one boat, I set off in another to the out-station Lundu, to which I was appointed, and now had gained a smattering of the language, although I had had little practice in speaking; but two or three thousand words were stocked in readiness to provide my faculties with a wherewithal to make myself understood. The Rev. Mr. Gomez accompanied me. We had been in the country about the same time, and had an equal knowledge of affairs and language. Our boat was small, and crowded with boxes, &c.; but as we did not come to Borneo to seek comfort, we thought little of the matter. As we proceeded we found the sea to be running high, and more than once our boat was tracked by her crew, and then only just kept afloat. Our clothes, &c., were drenched. I preferred walking on the beach with my gun, and at night slept on the sands; but the flies were very annoying, and in the morning my skin was puffed and sore. However, no discomfort ensued that a cold bath would not

remedy. The tracks of deer and pigs were numerous on the beach, and one evening I strolled out with a gun and my companion, more for the sake of amusement than with the expectation of killing anything. After some time I descried in the dusk an animal which I guessed to be a pig, and dropping on my knee, fired and brought him down. As he struggled, I borrowed my friend's sword, a few cuts from which dispatched him. By the dim light he seemed very large. In the morning I went out again to look at the game, and to my surprise found I had made a ridiculous mistake, having cut off his hind quarters instead of the head in the dark evening. His tusks were a considerable length. This was the first beast I had ever killed, and an absurd blunder I had committed in my achievement.

On arriving at Lundu, I found a small bungalow had been prepared for me, containing only one room, with a capacious verandah around. The morning was beautiful after a pouring night, and as I viewed the surrounding objects, fresh and sweet-scented, with the dew still hanging, I felt as proud as if I had lately been elevated to a very lucrative and commanding position. The natives immediately flocked around. The old chief's sons were sent with a message, to tell me that my father would visit his son in the course of

an hour; that he thought his son might be tired and would require rest before receiving visitors. My future brothers, Langi and Gali, retired, conveying my thanks to the thoughtful old chief. Not a bad message, I thought to myself, from a Dyak who is looked on as a savage, and an untutored barbarian.

My sensations were strangely novel. A feeling of immense elation ran through my mind as I inhaled the fresh atmosphere, and gazed on the grand mountains with their falls and primitive jungles, already my delight. After an hour's soliloquy when reclining, though far from sleeping, the old chief made his appearance. His entry was charming, for kindness smiled upon his stern old features, and as he clasped my hand he exclaimed, "Oh! your father is very joyful to see you, but your house is not yet finished, and badly built; your father, however, did his best with lazy workmen who would not listen to his directions." I found it a grand trial of the language, this first *début*, and although the 2000 words sprouted rather sluggishly, yet I was able to make myself understood. But words would only find utterance for a short time, and I soon became tired, so I allowed the Dyaks to run on at their pleasure, and did my best to listen and comprehend all they said. The chiefs proposed to call out all their followers, for the purpose of clearing the

jungles around my abode, so that I might have an extensive garden; and then they advised that the Chinamen should be ordered to turn up the ground free of expense. They offered also to provide me with rice and fowls for some months, as I ought not, they said, to purchase anything at first, but to live on their hospitality. However, I declined receiving any of these kindnesses; they nevertheless for several days showered presents on me, and every morning the old chief sent rice and other things. I soon found out the old gentleman had a taste for strong liquors, and one evening, when many were present and drinking, after the second glass, he called me a diamond, or jewel, which he should keep on the top of his head, and then shook me by the hand, saying, "Your father feels so very drunk, he must go home." His wife, as well as the other community of females, came to visit me often, each bringing her small quota of presents, until I felt sometimes disinclined to receive things for which I made no return. They were mostly pleasing and laughing wenches, without any extra burden of beauty or ugliness. My garden, on clearance, afforded me an immediate occupation, and every fresh fathom created new interests in my mind. The sad news of the death of poor Lee soon reached me, while living in the most calm, quiet state of peace and security in this delight-

ful of all abodes (Lundu). As the deplorable event which deprived us of this amiable and most excellent officer may illustrate life in Saráwak, I shall venture to relate it more in detail.

Rentap, the redoubtable Dyak chief, had threatened repeatedly to attack Mr. Brereton's fort, and in consequence, a small look-out stockade had been placed a few miles above the fort at Sakarang. Mr. Lee had lived for some years as the co-operator and companion of Mr. Brereton in Sakarang, and now had been appointed to a separate station at Lingga, which was a branch of the same river as Sakarang, *i.e.*, Batang Lupar. Reports had been brought to Sakarang, that Rentap was in his war boat for the purpose of making an attack, and Mr. Brereton sent down a hasty note to Lee, asking him to come up and assist with his Lingga force. Lee attended to his request without due preparation, and the Dyaks accompanied him in their small boats, without proper armament, or the general paraphernalia of even Dyak warfare. No dream had been interpreted, no bird been listened to, or any other important basis for Dyak mental phenomena to rest and act on.

They left Sakarang fort, and arrived at this stockade, knowing that the enemy were in force a reach or two above them. After day had well opened, a few

of the enemy's boats made their appearance round a point; the big gun was fired from the stockade, the shot scattered about the enemy's force, which immediately turned round and made off, appearing to be in full retreat. Mr. Brereton's force followed helter skelter after them, and when rounding the point, were encountered by Rentap's heavy boats pouncing on them with a strong ebb tide in their favour. The consequence was that boat after boat was swamped, one of which was Mr. Brereton's; he with difficulty gained the bank, and was saved only by the assistance of his Malay party. Lee dashed gallantly on, spurning the idea of turning round, although he was begged to do so by his native crew, who too well knew that there was little hope of any success with such odds against them. Lee called out, "Save yourselves; I must stand;" the consequence was, his boat was boarded by the enemy; his crew stood by him as long as they could with any degree of hope, then jumped for the bank, which they reached. But poor Lee fought doggedly, first of all with his rifle, and then drawing his scimitar, he slashed right and left, until overpowered, when his head was nearly severed from his shoulders; he fell overboard and sank. His sword, which is now in my possession, was afterwards picked up. The enemy fortunately did not obtain his head, and they

can only boast of having that of one white man, a gentleman who was killed a short distance above this very place while accompanying the "Dido s" expedition. They had been entrapped by a crafty stratagem of Dyak warfare, which consists in sending a few small boats to appear in view of the enemy for the purpose of enticing their opponents to a position in which they might be taken at a disadvantage. The same thing had happened in the previous case: when pushing on too vigorously, our men met large boats lying in ambush awaiting their arrival at a certain point, when a similar attack was made with like disaster, and eighteen men were killed. One only of the boat's crew survived to tell the tale, and he was covered with spear wounds. We received orders from Saráwak to prepare boats for an attack which was to be made in the course of this year. I persuaded the Lundu chief to set to work at once in building boats, and ere many days a large tree was felled, half of which was for the keel of their own boat, and half for mine; the length was 60 feet. Malay boat-builders were hired, and I paid particular attention to the way the planking was put together; fixtures were made with wooden spikes instead of nails, and as for their implements, although of the roughest description to a stranger's eye, yet it was surprising how quickly they were capable of reducing a rough log

into a piece of planking. Before the Orang Kaya commenced his boat, many plates and dishes were carefully laden with rice and other eatables; sirih and pinang (betel) were also placed, so that the spirits could partake of these luxuries and satisfy themselves. Besides this, to the people congregated around the place where the boat was about to be built, arack was served out, of which they all sipped with the utmost gravity, and the few words that were spoken referred to their enemies, the Sakarangs and Saribus, upon whom their whole attention was evidently concentrated.

I was hunting a short while since when my dogs killed two large pigs; I was only present at the death of one, and then after having nearly all my clothes torn off by thorns while crawling through the low brushwood. These animals are large, and fat in the fruit season, and the Dyaks who followed eagerly cut up the flesh and took it home.

My cook was a Mahomedan, so could not handle the unclean blood. It is a disgusting animal, say what Christians may on the subject. Can such an oleaginous substance possibly be wholesome?

I had been attempting to go without wine, tea, sugar, or any other superfluous et ceteras, but after three weeks of this abstinence I found that my John

Bull constitution and luxurious propensities suffered much, and while attempting to climb a mountain I was obliged to rest repeatedly for want of strength and breath. While lounging in the shade of a large tree, with my athletic followers who were taking compassion on me, I tried to point out the beauties of the surrounding scenery, even the power displayed in the fabric of a leaf, but found my audience could not, or would not, comprehend the poetical strain.

One evening the old Pang-lima (warrior) of the place sat late with me, relating many marvellous anecdotes, and his appearance denoted great peculiarities, a smiling and jocose eye, with a strange style of spluttering forth his words out of a large pair of protruding lips.

He was very talkative. Among other things, he told me that many years ago a party of Sibuyau Dyaks, mostly his own near relations, and all known to him, were walking in the jungle, when one man, to their sudden surprise, ran to a distance from the rest, as if he had been seized by the spirits; he climbed a tree and remained in the woods, while his companions returned home. After the man had been absent several years, living as an Antu, he returned to his family, covered with hair like an orang-outan.

After some months the hair fell off, and he became like the others again. This was narrated with a serious and grave face, and he likewise assured me he knew the man in question.

These people are really truthful, and their incredible stories, which are brought vividly to their minds in *dreams*, are actually credited as having taken place. The Malays of a superior class are likewise most absurdly superstitious: and only yesterday, an elderly Hadji requested me to shoot a particular kind of black bird, as he wished to fix its feet and head against his doorway, to appease any spirits that might bring sickness on his threshold.

April.—I was now appointed to the Lingga station to take the late Mr. Lee's place: this was a more important place, and required considerable vigilance to keep the Saribus head hunters at a respectable distance.

I was sorry to leave Lundu and its inhabitants, with whom I had formed many attachments. I spent two months in Saráwak before matters were arranged for my departure for Lingga. There was one report of a Saribus fleet being out on a piratical cruise, mustering forty boats strong, and we started fully manned and armed, but found not a trace of an enemy, nor had the inhabitants on the coast seen or heard anything of

them. Such reports seem to be of usual occurrence in the vivid imagination of these Easterns—

"How easy to suppose a bush a bear."

An unfortunate accident happened at this time. A Malay woman of a village in Saráwak, while bathing her child at the landing-place, in daylight, before the eyes of her husband, who was standing on the bank within a few yards of her, was seized by a huge alligator, and carried away into the river. The poor man jumped after his wife, and actually touched the alligator, but it was hopeless his attempting to rescue the victim. A few moments afterwards, the monster rose to the surface, and swinging his prey over his head above the water, he in this manner exultingly swam in front of all the houses in the village. The unfortunate woman was then still alive, and her cries were piercingly audible.

CHAPTER II.

Chart—Vocabulary—Position—Boundaries—Malays—Land Dyaks—Derivation of word—Locality—Hindooism—Sea Dyaks—Number—Localities—Languages—Customs—Theories—Origins—Dyak religion—Code—Omens—Future state—Suicide—Instances—Maladies—Longevity—Calculation of time—Padi farming—Crops—Administration of justice—Albinoes, Menangs, or soothsayers—Epithets of surprise—Extraordinary practices—Maias, their instinct—Fallacious ideas—What occasioned by—Dimensions of Maias—Female characteristics—Appearance, behaviour, &c.—Jealousy—Fourth division—Malanau—Localities—Names of branches—Practices—Human sacrifice—Character—Cannibalism—Cure of sick—Absurd ceremony—Burials—Provision for future life—Inhabitants—From whence arrived—Suppositions—Position of country—China—Gradual change—Articles of valûe—General migration from the north—The Chinese—Their qualities—Capabilities.

I HAVE attached a *bird's-eye-view* chart to this chapter, delineating, so far as one was able with only a pocket compass, the directions of the many rivers in Saráwak territory, and showing the relative bearing of each in the interior. There is little doubt that all the heads of the main trunks are directed towards the centre of the island. This leads one to infer that there must be some mountains in the interior of con-

siderable height, although the great amount of rain so continually falling in these latitudes, will almost account for the numerous rivers and streams in every direction. There are inhabitants to be found throughout the island, but many of the villages are far distant from each other. Intercourse is held among themselves, and they rely on no exterior commodities, their wants being singularly simple.

The territory of Saráwak comprises two hundred and twenty miles of sea coast in a straight line facing the north-west, and its depth inland extends from eighty to one hundred miles. The Brunei territory borders it on the east, and the Dutch possessions are to the southward and westward. The boundaries inland are the sources of the tributaries to the Kapuas river; and again, further to the eastward and centre of the island, are found the heads of the Banger Masin and Kotei rivers, which have their outlets on the south and south-east side of the island. The tribes and branch tribes are very numerous, and a rough estimate from 200,000 to 300,000 souls is the nearest approximation I will venture on, for the communication is difficult even on the coast section, and many of the inland branch tribes are as yet only known by name. The general plan of estimating the number is by allowing four or five to each door of a long house, the

lesser to the oppressed, and the greater number to the wealthy and prosperous localities.

The first Division,[*] and most civilised, are the Malays who are Mahomedans, and occupy habitations on the coast, and have for a length of time supplied the inland population with salt and other necessaries, making fabulous profits on such articles. It seems evident these people have come from Sumatra or the Malayan Peninsula; but since their arrival they have been mixed with the Dyak and Malanau populations, adopting many of their customs and much of their language, but they have always borne the name of Mahomedans, and their court language is the same as spoken in Sumatra, with very few exceptions. It has often been compared to Italian in its sweetness of sound, and has some peculiarities besides strangely bearing an affinity to it; for instance, a Malay will ask pardon when he lifts the ends of his trousers to show a bruise on his legs, or give you a "salaam" on naming his arm or knee. The Italians also have a

[*] *1st Division.*—Malays.

2nd Division.—Land Dyaks. Branches: Sarambau, Singgei, Senta, Salakau, Lara, Bukar, Engkroh, Engrat, Milikin, Sow.

3rd Division.—Sea Dyaks. Branches: Ballaus, Sibuyau, Sakarang, Saribus, Undup, Batang Ayer, Lamanak, Bugau, Kantu.

4th Division.—Malanau tribe. Branches: Mattu, Rejang, Mukah, Kayan, Bakatan, Maloh, Ukit, Punan, Skapan, Kanowit.

similar method of apology when mentioning their feet or foot gear, and utter a preparatory expression of "saving your presence," or, "with all respect,"* before talking of such vulgar parts. The manner too of asking some questions, and answering, in exactly the same words, the difference being only regulated by the intonation of the voice, is similar.

Second Division—Land Dyaks.—The generic term Dyak (or properly called Dya by themselves) in many dialects simply means *inland,* although among many of the branch tribes the term is not known as being referable to themselves, further than in its signification as a word in their language. Some of the interior populations, even as far off as Brunei, are called Kà-daya-n. Then again, the Mattu or Malanàu name for inland is Kadaya, although the generic term applied to themselves is "Malanau," the origin of which is unknown. Again, the name of the numerous tribes situated far in the interior of Rejang, although a distant branch of the Malanau tribe, are called "Kayan," and our own more immediate people "Daya," or as more generally known Dyak. The land Dyaks' word for inland is Kadayo.

After these few vague preliminary remarks, on

* Mrs. Gretton's Italy.

which the more scientific may enlarge, I will proceed to give some description of their habits, which are more immediately under our observation. The land Dyaks—so named by Europeans in consequence of not being accustomed to go to sea, either for trading or piratical purposes—number some forty branch tribes, with great variations in language, and it would be now almost impossible to find the main or principal stock, unless it can be traced back to the Malay or Javanese tongues. They occupy localities up the rivers Sadong, Samarakan, Saráwak, and Lundu, and it is my belief have migrated from the lower section of the Kapuas, marked *red* on the map. The remains of Hindooism found among them, such as stone-shaped bulls and other stone utensils; the refusal among them to touch the flesh of cattle and deer, and so particular are they, that they will fine a man for even spilling the blood of these animals on their premises; the name of their deity being Juwata—these testifying points support a fair conjecture that they must have gained a vague notion of Hindoo worship from people coming into the Kapuas river from the island of Java, which is only distant from some of the outstretching points of Borneo two hundred miles, and fair winds generally prevail between.

The Hindoo religion was the prevailing belief in

Java four hundred years ago, and even the Saráwak Malays of the present generation can recollect the time when it was usually said in conversation, in reference to distant bygone dates, "In the days of the Hindoos," which expression has become extinct, as the Mahomedans of late years have been in the habit of going hadji to Mecca, and are now able to use the dates of the Hegira.

The inland populations in and about this division of Borneo are eastward and northward bound, frequently migrating in search for fresh farming lands, about which they continually quarrel, and in consequence disperse, forming a new nucleus for a branch tribe.

Their customs and appearance differ considerably from the other tribes, and do not encourage so great an interest in a traveller's breast as the sea Dyaks, who are a fairer and finer people in every way. There are many wild traditions to be gathered among these people. Mention is made of their forefathers having come, or been brought, in a large ship from the northward, and the conjectural surmise is that the country they allude to must either be Cochin-China or Siam. The population in the whole of this section does not exceed 40,000 souls, and among their present habitats the remains of former villages possessing inhabitants

of a far higher state of civilisation are frequently being found. Several have been dug up since the publishing of Mr. Spencer St. John's book, which mentions a few remnants found in the Saráwak district. Other remains, far distant, have been brought to light, with some of the gold ornaments, seven feet under ground, as well as many articles of crockery and other utensils. These articles being found much further in the interior, gives the subject additional interest. The depth under ground will probably be accounted for by the gradual increase of soil, which is so often being washed down in the freshes.

Third Division—Sea Dyaks.—The Sea Dyaks occupy the centre of the Saráwak territory, numbering from one hundred to one hundred and twenty thousand souls, and have arrived from the centre section, marked *green* on the map, of the Kapuas river. I will not attempt to trace their previous localities on this island further than that region. The branch tribes are numerous, named after their different countries, Sibuyau, Lingga, Undup, Sakarang, Saribus, and Ulu Ayer, or Upper Water. The latter live in the vicinity of the Kayans and Malohs, to whom they bear some resemblance; but more of them in the fourth division. The Sea Dyaks have been the principal head hunting heroes, and are by far the most

active and energetic of all the inhabitants in the Saráwak territory. Their language bears a strong resemblance to the Malayan tongue, and I have frequently found words from Marsden's Dictionary used in familiar conversation among themselves, and yet unknown to the Malays on the coast.

It may be safely concluded that Malay words are interspersed among all their languages; but with some branches much more so than others. It cannot be denied also, that there are some of their practices much in advance of the appearance they present as a race; gleams of sunshine showing through a cloudy atmosphere. For instance,—their forges, and ability to manufacture weapons for warfare, are of very superior quality; and some tribes in the interior of Rejang are even able to smelt their own iron, which is second to no other for making arms. We find the curious complex manufacture of short swords, possessing concave and convex blades, which are capable, by this means, of penetrating either wood or flesh to a surprising extent; but much practice is required to use them properly; as a mistake in the angle of cutting, would bring the weapon round and often wound the holder. There is a method not less intricate used by the Saribus and Sakarang Dyaks for obtaining fire, which is peculiarly artistic, and

from what direction such a practice could have been inherited is beyond my ken. The instrument is a small metal tube, about three inches long, closed at one end, with a separate piston, the bottom of which fits closely into the tube, and when some dried stuff answering the purpose of tinder is introduced, and the piston slapped suddenly down, the head of it being held in the palm of the hand, in order to withdraw it as quickly as possible with a jerk, fire is by this means communicated to the tinder in the tube. The Dyaks call the instrument "besi api."

I have one in my possession, but have never been successful in obtaining a light with it. These practices are not named as being in any way wonderful in themselves, or new to science, as anyone probably knows that sudden exhaustion of air produces fire, and would be able to give a lecture on the minutiæ of the proceeding. But the strange and unaccountable question is, how such customs were first introduced amongst so primitive a race as is to be found in these lands, who even eat with their fingers, and possess other habits which give them the name of demoniacal cut-throats. They are far superior to the New Zealanders in many useful accomplishments; and a question often arises in the mind, whether it be the dusky remains of olden civilisation, or the dawning of

day, consequent on an improving and progressing state of spontaneous development.

If I were to reason on the subject, the facts produced would tend to support the previous idea, namely, that these tribes are the offshoots of more civilised peoples, and have inherited customs from their forefathers, most of which are now forgotten; the useful manufacture of weapons and implements for their own employments remaining still known to them. My feeling of interest, however, in these dusky gentlemen overcomes dry unpleasant facts, as it is far more gratifying in every way to entertain a notion (although perhaps a wrong one), that for their own necessities, and by their own industry, they have awakened practices so needful to themselves. The New Zealanders had no more than sharp stones for axes in the beginning of the last century, while these Dyaks have constructed numerous and complicated instruments for a considerable period. Both of these theories support the Christian and Darwinian teaching, as neither allows that people can come into spontaneous existence, but maintains that they are developed from first parents, or previous causes. The orthodox one being mystified in the fabulous legend of Adam and Eve or the Mosaic cosmogony, and that of Mr. Darwin's theory, may be carried back through innumerable

ages, and perhaps varieties, when the parentage might be deduced by retrogressive steps through regular stages of dismemberment. But origins of languages and peoples seem ever clouded with endless mystery, and are as difficult to find as the real origin of everything else on the earth's surface.

Whether we follow the orthodox Christian teaching of Divine interposition to account for things which the human reason cannot unravel sufficiently for belief, or whether we receive Darwin's hypothesis of a few parent stocks, to account for the life of the animal and physical kingdom, one is as darkly clouded and fraught with difficulties as the other at the present time; but the latter hypothesis offers us this advantage, that it awakens faculties, to observe, to inquire, and to gain and hold to the several straws on the path of knowledge; whereas the other permits our minds to sleep with a consolatory faith, trust, and satisfaction, that we are in existence, and it little matters how we came, except that we are sent by an Almighty Power to do good in this our habitation.

On the subject of the oral superstition or religion of the Dyaks, the forms have already been mentioned in Mr. St. John's work. There is no doubt they have a regular hierarchy of beings, to each of whom are attached different attributes. There is, in the first

place, the Almighty and Omnipotent—incomprehensible and unapproachable. Next to him is a prophet, or at all events a supernatural being, of extraordinary power and ability—a vicegerent on earth, and administrator of human affairs—an example to be brave and just. And besides this being, there are minor ones, each differing slightly from the other. Some are married, whose wives are surpassingly beautiful; and others, again, are prolific in the extreme, being capable of peopling the earth with wonderful alacrity. Then, again, we find the good genii, and evil spirits of strongly-marked characters, which are vividly set forth to the rising generation.

The interminable lofty jungles of these countries, the solitary grandeur and awe which must invest the most unimaginative mind while living or wandering through them, frequent sudden storms, accompanied by appalling thunder and lightning, doubtless considerably enhance the tendency of a people to entertain superstitious ideas. However, the Dyak inhabitants, attached as they may be to older modes, are too inquisitive and fond of gain to remain long in a dark state, if a better and clearer light be set before them, as their minds and temper are pliable and amiable, and not too inert to adopt fresh and improved practices. These Dyaks have a distinct notion of a future

state, which is often mentioned in their conversation. There are different stages before reaching it—some agreeable, and others the contrary—and their final abode, or as it appears dissolution, is a state of dew. Their burial rites all tend to support the idea of a future state; but oral traditions being so liable to alteration, there is now no very clearly defined account, as different people give different statements, but nevertheless agree in the main points, and fully expect to meet each other after death. Their feeling is not fanatic or fatalistic, as in Mahomedans, and they have a sound appreciation of the blessings of this life. I have never yet known a case of a Dyak amoking, yet it was of frequent occurrence among Malays in former times. Wise laws and severe punishments have to a great extent curbed this unruly caprice, which evinces the keenest sensibility of the nervous system, and the weakest amount of moral power and courage in counteracting its influence. But Dyaks not unusually, under great disgrace, or after having acted so as to incur the anger of their parents, resort to a poisonous root, and commit suicide. Frequent cases have come under my observation; two of these I proceed to relate, both having happened since my residence in the country.

A Dyak family residing on one of the tributaries to

the Rejang river, was particularly badly off for padi, a failure in the crop nearly reducing them to a starving condition. The father, on seeing his children and wife gradually weakening for want of sufficient nourishment, drew his parang (sword), killed them all, and then stabbed himself.

The other case happened not long afterwards in the same tribe. A man had complained to his wife of her laziness in attending to her household duties and farming, accompanying his speech with such epithets as a lazy slut, or good-for-nothing woman. Shortly afterwards, on the same day, she left the house, plucked a bit of the tubar root, sat down under the shade of the old jungle, where she devoured it, and was found dead shortly afterwards. The husband bitterly repented his untimely accusation, and was fined by the chief of the tribe about six pounds for ill-treatment to his wife, and being the cause of her death.

The Malays seldom or never commit self-murder, and look on the Dyaks with considerable contempt; but the former will amok, and cut their neighbours down in their hallucination. This difference between the Dyak and Malay may be traced further, and perhaps be attributed to the social system, which is so radically bad with the latter. There is little trust and love between the inmates of one house and another, petty

jealousies being carried to a frightful pitch of virulence; whereas Dyaks live in long houses, and are a sociable and amiable community, with strong mutual attachments.

These people have the curse of many fearful maladies among them; that of scrofula is marked, but is not perhaps so frequent as among the savage tribes of other countries. Consumption is not uncommon, and children are especially subject to it, often with fatal consequences. Ophthalmia, at certain seasons, attacks whole tribes, and when neglected, deprives many of sight, but, taken in the first instance, yields to the mildest remedies. It is at the time of weeding the padi farms in September and October that people principally suffer from this complaint.

Another disease common to all these inhabitants is a gradual falling away of flesh and general debility, which invariably (although in many instances after a considerable time) ends in death. I have attended many poor fellows in this malady, and could never administer any complete remedy for it. Elephantiasis is also common on the coast, particularly in the low countries; even many Europeans (myself among the number), who have exposed themselves to malarian jungles, have been attacked with it. It commences by a pain in the groin, with light fever, gradually

drawing towards the lymphatic veins of the leg, and is exceedingly painful for some days; in some constitutions it flies to the foot, and leaves an enlarged leg for life, but on the greater number the swelling decreases after the fever has left the system.

In my opinion, an erroneous idea is generally entertained among these Dyak races respecting both length of life and capability of bearing children. If allowances be made for their not having the advantage of medical skill, there would, I believe, be found almost as great a longevity and fruitfulness as in England. It is not an uncommon occurrence to meet women without a grey hair on their head, who have borne their seven and sometimes nine children, the eldest of whom may have reached a marriageable age. Four generations are often alive at the same time. Natives sometimes look old when they are only twenty-five years of age, but do not alter afterwards until they are far advanced. Whether a man be thirty or sixty is difficult to guess. Calculations of age are generally computed by the increased size of trees, or by certain events, particularly the attacks made upon their country. Short distances are described by arriving at such a place before the hair has had time to dry, or by the time for cooking one, two, or three pots of rice, as the distance may happen to be. Some-

times they explain lapse of time by the height of the sun.

The Dyaks have no correct calculation of year, beyond what they call their padi year. They are guided in the planting season by certain stars, and wait for the Pleiades group to be a certain height above the horizon before daylight. This denotes the sowing time; after which they are guided by the size of the young padi, which has to be weeded and transplanted, and bears fruit in eight months in the low grounds, and seven on the hills. The latter is of inferior quality, but as it does not require replanting, the Dyaks generally obtain a larger quantity of it, which generally repays them for deficiency in quality. They reap by means of a bit of sharpened steel, which is attached to their fingers, and in grasping a handful of heads of the padi, the steel cuts through them; but it is a slow process. The fruit is taken home, and after being dried, is stored in different-sized troughs of bark, which are sewn together, and form strong, endurable cases. The only means of computing the quantity of padi for sale, is by naming the size round of one of these troughs.

The harvests vary very much in the quantity produced. A failure in the burning of the old jungle, owing to too much wet, or want of sun in the ripening

season, so injures the crop as to put the inhabitants to great straits to obtain means of maintaining life. Vegetables are not in abundance, except those growing wild in the jungles. The feeding on unripe cucumbers or other foods of the kind, occasions much sickness. An apparent provision of nature, however, much assists the inhabitants, as the causes which produce bad crops of padi seem to favour the various fruits of the country, and thus are the people afforded means of living.

Then, the luscious durean, with its odoriferous perfume, is a great benefit, although its heating propensity causes light fevers to be prevalent. These ignorant people of course look upon the incident as a special intervention and compensation of their God (Bertara).

The administration of law among themselves supplies many admirable precedents. Unfortunately, their ties of relationship and want of substantial principle, are impediments to the carrying out of justice; at the same time, they are peculiarly alive to the advantages of a just administration, which never fails to secure the aid and support of the majority.

In the event of one tribe commencing war upon another, by killing without provocation, the aggressor would incur a "hukum mungkal," or fine of 75*l.*, according to custom. In cases of adultery, the husband or wife in fault is liable to be beaten with sticks by

the aggrieved parties, on the open ground, as their houses are held sacred. Their system of justice in this case is of a very beneficial character, as the female suffers alike with the male. Petty cases of theft are punished lightly, as well as all other trivial cases, but nobody is allowed to molest his neighbour without incurring a fine. For instance, if a party of people should ever damage the drinking or bathing well of another house, or hack at the sticks on the landing-place, they would be mulcted. In quarrels about land, they are supposed only to use sticks, and they fall to in earnest: the most pugnacious keep very barbarous spiked and thorny ones for the express purpose, and many use bark hats and jackets to ward off the blows of these implements.

Cases of premeditated murder are very unusual among them, although at one time the attack of one party on another was often attended by death. A few examples of heavy fines, inflicted with a strong hand, have greatly decreased this evil.

A chief leading such a party is, in most cases, a man of property, and in the event of one of his followers being killed, he pays a jar worth 9*l.* to the deceased's parents, or nearest relations.

Their "menango," or soothsayers, bear a resemblance to the gree grees, or mondas, mentioned in Du

Chaillu's work. They are supposed to cure the sick by dealing with mysterious agencies; but the Dyaks are now becoming less confident of the efficacy of such practices, and are glad to obtain European medicines and attendance.

Their superstitious dread of eating certain animals is a point of resemblance between them and the inhabitants of the west coast of Africa; the reason being, they suppose these animals bear a proximity to some of their forefathers, who were begotten by them, or begot them.

Albinoes are found amongst them, and are sad objects, though the natives are fond of such monstrosities; to a white man their appearance is a most distressing sight. They answer exactly the description given by Burton and other travellers in different parts. They do not, however, appear to be so deficient in physical as mental capacity. The weakness of their eyes produces a nervous trembling, as if the pupil could not bear the light—the colour is of a faint pinkish tinge.

Epithets of surprise are often "Apai Indai," or "Aki Indai," "*Father and mother*," or "Oh, mother!" This expression seems very universal, for even Europeans appeal to their grandmothers in cases of distress or perplexity.

In many cases of sickness and death, on inquiring the cause, they reply, "Pansa antu," or "A spirit has passed." This may be otherwise interpreted "He possesses a devil."

The extraordinary custom of hanging rags on trees by the roadside, by every passer by, and the practice of heaping stones in recollection of some past event, are found here also. But I have only heard of one instance of the former, and on making inquiries, found it of the same curious character as mentioned by travellers in Madagascar, Ireland, and Africa. I believe it to be the remnant of some ancient idolatrous worship, which appears to have been almost universal in its practice, and now only the hollow letter remains, the substance having long since become extinct.

The Maias, or Orang-utan, which is supposed to resemble the human form, in a degree only second to the wonderful Gorilla of Southern Africa, is very common in some parts, and frequents certain localities, but is not to be found in others. I have never been able to account for this peculiarity of limited abode, as in some places the river is quite narrow enough for them to cross over; and one can scarcely think that the difference of vegetation can be so marked as to keep them stationary.

Their instincts may be sufficiently developed to hold

them together as a social community; but I do not believe they are capable of any very striking amount of discretion or perception. They are certainly strangely passionate when tormented, and their cries are wonderfully like those of a child. They also have some approach to a smile. It takes the form of a pleasing expression rather than a laugh. They are wonderfully like and unlike the human being. I should be glad to extinguish one idea possessed by eminent men, namely, that these animals are received into connubial partnership with even the very lowest of the human family in *these parts*. A stranger or visitor among them might, however, load a diary with anecdotes of Dyaks, who going to the woods, becoming orang-utans, and after several years, having borne many children, have returned and reverted to their former condition. Or he might hear that females have become pregnant by them, and borne twins, one as a human being, and another taking the form of its jungle parent. There are many other fables of a like kind; but there is no truth in them, and they themselves are very far from believing them. They would be indescribably horrified if such an experiment were seriously proposed to them. To prove that such accounts are entirely fabulous, they have similar ones about alligators, with whom they recount stories of

intimacy, and the probability of the one or the other is about equal. I fear transmutationists will be disappointed in their expectations of finding the *connecting link* in these parts. I should be glad to supply the information, if it could be obtained with any appearance of truth. But a traveller should be nothing if not impartial.

According to Du Chaillu's account of the Gorilla, it exceeds the height of the Maias only by a few inches; many larger specimens of the latter may yet be found. But scientific men are much attached to preconceived notions. I once was requested to send home the dimensions of a large Maias shot in Batang Lupar; its height exceeded any already found by a distinguished naturalist who had visited these parts: the consequence was that my measurement was discredited, although I had taken it with my own hands. The bones were buried deep, but were carried away by the pigs, and no more to be found. The strength of these animals is truly wonderful, and a man would have little chance of escape who had once been gripped by them.

I will endeavour now to give some description of the characteristics of Dyak females, whom I have had many opportunities of meeting, both when they have been paying me complimentary visits, and when I

have been staying in their houses, and so had frequent opportunities of judging their social and domestic qualifications.

The men will often be referred to in the following pages, at times when active operations have brought them more prominently forward. But the gentler sex are even more important really. They occupy positions, and are capable of exerting surprising influence in Eastern countries, in spite of their being so often erroneously supposed by Europeans to rank simply as goods and chattels. They deserve to have a few quiet pages reserved to their special notice.

In youth and before marriage their figures are slight and graceful, with small waists, and not too largely developed to obliterate the sylph-like contour of a budding beauty.

Their eyes are, in most cases, jet black, clear, and bright, with quick intelligence and temper beaming through the orbs. The shape of the lid when open is very oval, the lashes are long and thick, forming an abundant fringe, which shades the sun's piercing rays from the pupils. The brow covering is often so perfectly arched and finely chiselled, as to lead people to think that the outline has been shaved, as is done in many Eastern countries. We must step, however, the short distance of an inch and a half, from the sublime

to the ridiculous, and describe the nose by the simple but expressive term, "snubby and turn up." Then pass on to the mouth, from here to yonder, naturally ill-shapen and made worse by disfigurements, from the excessive chewing of sirih and betel-nut. The teeth are stained black and filed to a point, and the red juice is besmeared over their lips and considered an adornment. They are not, however, thick lipped, nor does their appearance evince an excess of the sensual passions, as is found in many Asiatics. The general expression of their countenances is attractive by the buoyancy and brightness emitted from the eye; this charm pleases and softens the remainder of their irregular features. The hair may be compared to a Shetland pony's tail, long, bright, and coarse, which lasts as long as health permits. A fever quickly deprives them of this beautiful adornment, of which they are exceedingly proud. They seldom fail to shake their heads before a spectator, in order to toss their flowing tresses over their back and shoulders. The more favoured ones, too, when on a visit, are fond of the excuse of excessive heat requiring the jacket to be withdrawn, to expose a smooth, satiny, brown skin. In warm climates this can scarcely be considered an indelicacy by the most sensitive.

Their general dress is very often reduced to the

short frock, which covers from the knees to the waist, and the jacket is used or not as they like.

Their labour soon brings an excess of muscle over their frame, and then their appearance becomes hard and healthful, but less interesting.

The holding of parangs in their unformed and youthful hands, for the purpose of cutting young jungle, injures their fingers, and many are to be seen with crooked and enlarged knuckle-bones. The ankle swells with continual plodding up hills, or in swampy grounds.

Often one fails to recognise them after gathering their harvests, when they are exposed from morn to night to sun and rain, and become very black and dingy coloured.

This, however, soon vanishes when they are restored to quiet life. The most trying house-work is beating out, or husking the padi, which is placed in a wooden trough, and pounded by a long heavy pole held in upright attitudes. Sometimes as many as four and five women work together, keeping exact time, accompanied with far more noise than thrashing out wheat in England. Their time is occupied from the time of youth, first in water-carrying, feeding poultry and pigs, learning, and then making cloths, and mats; then again in farming and padi husking, and last,

though not least, in watching their bairns, which come into the world without much ado or attention from nurses. Nature soon recovers herself, and the mother frequently is seen within a few days moving about with her new charge.

They marry at an early age, and separate frequently before they find a partner to please them, under the plea of bad dreams or birds. Strangers generally look on their conduct (irrespectively of these temporary and probationary marriages) as being remarkably volatile and disreputable; and this idea has been circulated by the teachers of the Gospel. But an impartial observer, after making inquiry, will find there are many more penalties attached to their peccadilloes than, I believe, are found under similar circumstances in Europe. The greatest disgrace is attached to a woman found in a state of pregnancy without being able to name her husband; and cases of self-poisoning, to avoid the shame, are not of unusual occurrence. If one be found in this state, a fine must be paid of pigs and other things. Few even of the chiefs will come forward without incurring considerable responsibility. A pig is killed, which nominally becomes the father, for want, it is supposed, of another and better one. Then the surrounding neighbours have to be furnished with a share of the fine to banish the

Jabu, which exists after such an event. If the fine be not forthcoming, the woman dare not move out of her room, for fear of being molested, as she is supposed to have brought evil (Kudi) and confusion upon the inhabitants and their belongings.

I believe there are many good and even fascinating qualities in Dyak women. They are not at all wanting in sharpness of intellect, good common sense, firmness of purpose, and constancy when they have once settled down.

In many cases they are more adept politicians than their husbands, and their advice is often followed in serious business. Likewise their assistance and good opinion go a long way to establish a successful result in any negotiation. Their general conversation is not wanting in wit, and considerable acuteness of perception is evinced, but often accompanied by improper and indecent language, of which they are unaware when giving utterance to it. Their acts, however, fortunately evince more regard for modesty than their words. Their gait is very stiff and ungraceful. It resembles waddling more than walking; and they always have the toes turned in, owing to the scantiness of their dress, and the habit of fixing its folds between the knees. They are wonderfully strong walkers, and fetch water for everyday household purposes from sur-

prising distances. The colour of their skin varies considerably, not so much between one tribe and another, as in various localities: and whether it be attributable to different kinds of water, or food, or increase of shade from old jungle, is a question. But there is no doubt that all who reside in the interior are much fairer than those who have moved towards the mouths of the rivers, and a very few years is able to effect the change of appearance. They say themselves it is owing to the muddy colour of the water in the lower grounds, whereas further up the river they bathe in, and drink of, clear gravelly-bedded streams. Their natural tint is an olive or bronze colour, which in my opinion is remarkably suited to the human race.

I will give one instance of their intense desire for admiration, and their vindictive (though puerile) spirit of jealousy. A Saribus Dyak girl formed a violent attachment to a young fellow, and they were, to the best of my knowledge, an engaged couple. On paying a visit to the long house in which they both lived, I produced a volume of Byron's Illustrated Beauties, and showed them to the people. The young man so admired them, that I made him a present of the lot, one of which he particularly eulogised and set apart as being angelic. He little knew what dark and deep-set frowns his remarks were calling forth from his living

love. Some days after I called again, and on seeing the pictures, found the special beauty's face scratched and disfigured over the eye and nose. The young man thought it had been done by some of the children of the house; but as the remainder were unharmed, we could lay the blame to no one but his lady-love.

Fourth Division—Malanaus.—This is the most numerous and widely-ranged tribe, far different from the rest, with ramifications extending over a space of many hundreds of miles, and occupying localities in the interior and centre of the island extending to the heads of the Kotei, Banger Massin, and Kapuas rivers in the interior, and beyond Brunei in a northward direction. Their exodus has been, and still is, from the top or head section of the Kapuas, *marked blue on the map.* And their different stages of advancement in civilisation are extremely interesting to observe. The most primitive section of the tribe are the Bakatans and Ukits, named from (bukit) a hill, with the affix "an"—meaning hill tribes. It will be desirable to mention that many of their practices are like those of the Samangs or Jacoons of the interior of Malacca. A vocabulary of the language of the latter I have as yet failed to obtain. The branch divisions are severally called after the countries in which they reside, each possessing different customs and dialects; but the

whole coast between Rejang and Brunei is no doubt inhabited by these people.

The branches inhabiting the inland and up-rivers vary more, although very distinctly of the same stock. The names of some of those branches are Kanowit, Tanjong, Kajaman, Punan, Maloh, Skapan, Kenniah, Bakatan, Ukit, and numerous others. Some few of these divisions possess traditions of having come originally from the Kotei river, which empties itself at the south-east of the island. And between the Rejang and the Kotei there are tribes on tribes, all through the centre of the island, all bearing a similarity to one another ;* yet they possess many individual characteristics, and differ much in customs and dialects.

The more primitive branches practise tatooing, variously arranged in their different countries: some are nearly covered, others merely have anklets, bracelets, or necklaces, with a star or two on their breasts. The further removed they are from civilisation, the more thickly are they generally found to be tatooed. The most civilised section lives coastways, and having much mixed with the Malays, has given up the

* These people have never seen the sea, and depend upon no imported supplies for their livelihood, in spite of their affinity one with another.

practice of head-hunting, and is now very unwarlike, but exceedingly treacherous. At the other extreme of the same tribe; namely, Bakatans and Ukits, &c., they do not value heads, but all the intermediate subdivisions and branches revel in this disgusting method of warfare, though not in so great a degree as the Sea Dyaks. Part of this tribe practise human sacrifice on the death of any chief or man of rank, although it is now quite extinct on the coast, owing to intermixture with more civilised peoples, and the prevention by Government. But it is still the custom among the Kayans and other inland branches, who seldom put to death any of their own people, but execute unfortunate captives or slaves brought from a distance.

These sub-tribes are a cruelly disposed people, and are in the habit of putting their enemies to death by horrible and barbarous tortures. The heads are taken, but after being used at the feast are not valued. Some of the divisions on the coast after obtaining the head of an enemy, exhibit it in a public place, where the women, dressed in their best clothes, repeat incantations, and walk past in procession : each one taps the head with a piece of wood. After this ceremony, it is thrown away. This tribe, as before mentioned, are cowardly, untruthful and treacherous, and are capable of committing many horrors, but the gravest attached

to the Kayans, I feel confident, is without *foundation*, namely, that of *cannibalism*. For during the expedition of 1863, there was no sign of it, and I had abundant opportunities of making strict inquiries in the very heart of the country. Many reports of this description are spread by the enemies of a people to degrade them in the estimation of Europeans. I have heard grave stories told of some of the inhabitants on the Kapuas river having tails of six and seven inches long. Traders had actually seen them swinging about when the people were running away, and there were small apertures in benches, for the tails to penetrate when they were sitting down. Such reports are purely fabulous, and I do not believe any tribes are cannibals in this part of Borneo, although stories go far to lead one to a contrary belief. For instance, some Malays told me only a short while ago, that on an expedition against the Engkayas, who live on a tributary of the Kapuas, and are under the Dutch jurisdiction, they met with pieces of bamboo, which these people had thrown away in alarm; these hollow canes were filled with human flesh, used as provisions. I regret that I am unable positively to contradict such statements; but it is my firm conviction cannibalism is not practised on any part of the Island of Borneo. Of the sale of relations, and even children, though not common,

yet there are many examples. Such atrocities prevail among the most primitive children of the woods, and are principally perpetrated for the purpose of obtaining food. They are too negligent to attend sufficiently to their farms. The many other failings of a disgusting nature we may pass over, as we know people of a low civilisation are not capable of drawing fine distinctions.

The Malanaù tribe's method of curing their sick is curious and ridiculous in the extreme; and without detailing the intricate minutiæ of such a proceeding, I will only mention that there are two plans, named Berasit and Embayu. The former sometimes lasts for seven and eight successive days. The inhabitants attend such a display as we should a theatre. The ceremony is done by a person, either man or woman, who is supposed to be able to interpret Satan's language, and they act in various ways while doing so. He, or she, is comically dressed, the costume being varied each night—going through imaginary everyday amusements, such as fishing, pulling in boats, or climbing to pick fruit, and many other daily occupations. The tones of their continual wail are monotonously musical, and the scene altogether is not displeasing, but produces a sensation of pity in a spectator's mind. The actors are hired individuals, who receive large sums from the

afflicted. The ladies and audience are glad of an opportunity of getting "an out," meeting their admirers, and wearing their fine clothes. Berasiting has much infected the Mahomedan community, who until lately frequently practised it, and were reluctant to abolish the custom at the instigation of the religious authorities.

The Embayu is the more primitive, and a more savage proceeding. The actors in such a scene present a ghastly and wild appearance. The man, or woman, with dishevelled hair, twirls the head round until his staring eyes show that he is almost beside himself. Then, with much sleight of hand, he is supposed to converse with spirits, and at a certain time to gain a power of withdrawing the devil, or evil simaugat ("soul") from him who is possessed of sickness.

The ceremony is attended by much mystery and absurdity. I once heard of an Englishman who was persuaded to try this remedy after a continued fever: he was living without a companion and without medicines. The actors waved the beautiful betel-nut blossom around his person, accompanied by mysterious passes, and energetic protestations to the spirit of sickness. What effect it had upon his malady I never heard.

The Malanaus build picturesque boats, decorated

with flags and other embellishments, which are dedicated to the use of departed spirits, who are supposed to travel in them on marine migrations. These crafts are placed near their graves.

Some of the sub-tribes of this division, after the death of a chief of notoriety, dress the corpse in best clothes, with every decoration of gold about his person. The sword, and all of the available necessaries of life, are also attached to him. He is then placed on an elevated platform, as a living being, and becomes a public spectacle in the house. His immediate family take up their seats around him; his slaves attend to his imagined wants with the fan, sirih and betel-nut. On such an occasion the house is opened to all visitors, the women, both old and young, form a line on one side, and the men on the other; then they romp together with the noise and confusion of a pack of maniacs. These games are carried on for some days, and long after the corpse is in a state of decomposition it is properly buried, or placed in order to obtain the bones on a future day. Another very absurd practice (now obsolete) was to drift the deceased's sword, eatables, clothes, jars,—and often in former days, a slave woman accompanied these articles, chained to the boat,—out to sea, with a strong ebb tide running, in order that the deceased might meet with

these necessaries in his upward flight. As a natural consequence, the unfortunate woman fell a sacrifice to this barbarous proceeding. But in many cases the Malays obtained previous intelligence of the forthcoming ritual, when they were in the habit of watching the mouth of the river to plunder the goods, as well as to obtain a slave free of expense.

I have always made it a point to attend, with considerable respect to strange people's practices, for it is as well not too abruptly to laugh at superstitious modes, however far-fetched they may seem. On one occasion, some of the Malanau people had laid the dry leaf of a palm, peculiarly folded up, within a few yards of my house, owing to some one having fallen down on this spot and been injured. The "Antus" (spirits) in consequence had to be appeased. Antus, or no Antus, I did not approve of the vicinity of this leaf to my abode, so picked it up and threw it away. I had been warned that anyone touching it would get a swollen arm. By some unpleasant coincidence, within two days of touching the leaf, my *arm became inflamed and swollen for more than a fortnight afterwards.*

Having mentioned the four divisions of populations inhabiting the Saráwak territory, some attempt will now be made to offer a reasonable hypothesis from what part of the world these people could originally

have arrived. In works on New Zealand, particularly the very excellent book by Dr. Thomson, we find that the supposed stock of the New Zealand inhabitants is taken back by a circuitous course to the Island of Sumatra. This supposition is based on the fact, that certain words are used in their traditions, bearing relation to islands intervening, on which they must have called while on their voyage.

There are many difficulties to be met before it can be received with any degree of certainty. Customs and language are almost totally different, but time would rapidly bring a change in them. Again, there seems a more important drawback, which is this: why should any people desire a change, leaving as they must have done, a beautifully rich country, abounding in every richness of cultivation with the smallest amount of labour, and even the spontaneous vegetation being sufficient for the bare wants of nature? Why, again, should a people migrate with their families, at the expense of trials and dangers by water, from a warm genial climate into a cold one? What inducement could they find to go to a place even the appearance of which was totally unknown to them, until within sight of its sandy beaches?

The writers on New Zealand may be allowed to entertain this hypothesis, for and against which there

is much to be said. Why should the island of Sumatra be more likely than the Malayan peninsula to have been the home of the original stock? Or again, take the large islands nearer to New Zealand and on its direct course, as Celebes or Java, which again, may in an earlier period have been peopled from Sumatra, as Sumatra, in one still earlier, had been populated from some other country.

But Sumatra may very probably have been one of the steps, or links, as Pulan Timor another, on which the New Zealanders and others may have lodged while on their migratory course. From the appearance of the map, the prevailing winds, and many other palpable reasons, there is great probability that these islands of the Eastern Archipelago have been peopled from the north. For if we take into consideration the crowds of inhabitants in China, the number dying yearly from starvation, and those rendered outcasts by the bloody wars of former times, their desire for emigration in consequence would be excessive.

The Malayan Peninsula adjoins the boundaries of Cochin China, and on the other side of that country we find the Chinese flocking in crowds, abounding far in excess of the resources of the land. One may then rationally infer a tendency to draw southwards, by land or sea. The result would follow. The nearest

available countries would be occupied, and Sumatra with these islands are the first lying directly south. If it could be ascertained, and there is no great difficulty attending such a research, the features of a northern Chinaman would, I believe, be found gradually to undergo a change, the farther south on the mainland we advance. For example: take a northern Chinaman, and compare him to a southerner. Apply the same argument to the Cochin Chinese and Siamese, and lastly to the Malayan Peninsula which is attached to Siam. These changes would be found very gradual, without a wider difference than there is between an Englishman and a Highlander.

In the north-east monsoon, which blows for about four months every year, any of their junks, which are built with every facility for running safely in a heavy rolling sea—could reach without difficulty the shores of Borneo or the surrounding islands. The difference of appearance, religion, language and customs, exterior changes and climate will amply account for.

The names of mountains, rivers, and many localities about Brunei and along the coast, give additional weight to these remarks. The highest mountain in Borneo, seen one hundred miles from the coast, is called the "Chinese Widow"—Kina Balu. For the rest, the reader may consult Mr. St. John's work.

Another point in connection with this subject is the most valuable article of commerce among the inhabitants—their jars, prized to an extraordinary extent over the greater part of the island. There are many different kinds; but without doubt they were manufactured by the Chinese.

Here again is another peculiar fact. Bamboo, a native of China, we now find in considerable quantities in this country. It has been largely planted in the interior, and is valuable for may uses.

The forge, bellows, &c., and manufactory of iron found in this country may then (if these suggestions could be proved by the collection and summing up of further evidence) be said to have been brought here by the Chinese,—the original parent stock of the present population of Borneo, but who have now lost their identity amid exterior changes and altered circumstances of all kinds.

The Chinese are not so bigoted to their own superstitions, nor prejudiced against others, as any other race of people. And where converts have been made, there have been few cases in which they have returned to their former creed. Their industrious character in their previous condition, where *want* was the hard tutor, would soon lapse into the easy-minded gentlemen of these parts, encouraged, as it would be, by the

climate and the facilities for maintaining life. A few generations without any regular communication with the mother country, could bring about changes sufficient to entitle them to be designated (by superficial observers) another race.

Before closing this chapter on the population residing in the Saráwak territory, I will offer a few remarks on the Chinese, who are second to no other in importance in the Eastern seas. So far as my experience of these people goes (notwithstanding that Saráwak has suffered so severely from a branch of them—for we must make allowances for the frailties of human nature), John Chinamen, as a race, are an excellent set of fellows, and a poor show would these Eastern countries make without their energetic presence. They combine many good, many dangerous, and, it must be admitted, many bad qualities. Activity, enterprise, and speculation, perhaps, are their uppermost and outermost virtues. They are given to be overbearing and insolent (unless severely kept down), nearly to as great a degree as Europeans of the rougher classes.* They will cheat their neighbours, and resort to all manner of deceptions *on principle*. But their redeeming qualities are comparative charitableness and liberality; a fondness for improvements, and, except in small mercantile

affairs and minor trading transactions, they are honest.

They, in a few words, possess the wherewithal to be good fellows, and are more fit to be compared to Europeans than any other race of Easterns.

They have been excluded as much as possible from gaining a footing in Batavia, under the plea of their dangerous and usurious pursuits; but the probability is, that they would have raised an unpleasant antagonism in the question of competition in that country. The Chinaman would be equal to the master, or white man, if both worked fairly by the sweat of their brow. As for their usury, it is not of so dangerous a character as that which prevails among the Javanese, or other natives, whose system so frequently leads to slave debtors, forced, as has been described, to work for a master merely to defray the interest of the debt incurred, without a possibility of paying the original sum. I simply give utterance to my ideas, formed from what I found Chinamen, after many years' experience, to be. Upon my first arrival I was strongly possessed by the opinion that they were all rascals and thieves—the character so generally attached to the whole race at home. But to be candid, and looking at both sides, I would as soon deal with a Chinese merchant in the East as an European one; and I believe

the respectable class of Chinese to be equal in honesty and integrity to the white men.

The Chinese may be nearly as troublesome a people to govern as Europeans, certainly not more so: and their good qualities, in which they are not deficient, should be cherished and stimulated, while their bad ones are regulated by the discipline of law under a just and liberal government.

They are a people specially amenable to justice, and are happier under a stringent than a lenient system. But there is a moderation in things, and the Chinese soon gnash their teeth and rebel against anything like bullying or harshness.

CHAPTER III.

Lingga—Situation and population—Alligators—Manner of catching—Excursion to interior—Tabooed river—Fish poisoning—Venomous ants—Discomfort—Dyak reception—Doctoring—Bad government—Old ladies—Inveterate talkers—Dyak impetuosity—Man wounded—Superstition—Deer-snaring—Trip to Sibuyau—Night walk—Thorns—Maias' habits—Tabarong conference—Contradictory reports—Enemies and half-friends—Second trip to Sibuyau—Evil spirits—Scenery—Gamang—Initiation—Monkey killed—Saribus Dyaks depredations—Dandi expedition—Pa Demdang—River dangers—Sakarang—Dyak custom—Requisition—Visit to Dyak homes—Inland march—Difficult walking—Halt—Conference—Division of force—Panic—Confusion—Return—Wounded men—Enemy's chivalry—Dead failure—Attack on Bugau Dyaks—Captives—Their behaviour—Sungei Lang expedition—Conference—Advance—Engagement—Victory—Return—Fatal sickness—Death of friend—Solitary abode—Dyak custom—Deaths by Saribus Dyaks—Old ladies—Their power—Malpractices—Complaints—Relief of afflicted—Shocking conduct—Trial of strength—Quiet resignation.

June, 1853.—THE station Lingga, seventy miles from Saráwak, and about twenty miles from the mouth of the Batang Lupar, is situated on a small river of the same name, and contains about five thousand inhabitants, chiefly Dyaks.

From this date I considered myself fairly among

these gentlemen of the jungle, and in what is termed the Sea Dyak division, which has been explained in the previous chapter.

The appearance of the country about Lingga was far from inviting, being a dead swamp, without any high ground for ten miles around, and then only in detached hills. The Malay population lived thirteen miles from the mouth of the river, on a hill named Banting, the precipitous sides of which afforded a safe retreat from the incursions of Saribus marauders. The Saráwak Government considered it for the good of the community to move the Malays to the mouth of the Lingga, and in consequence ordered wood for my future fortified house. The ground around was a black mire, about three feet deep, with the shaky trembling nature of an Irish bog. The Malays and Dyaks soon commenced building this primitive stronghold, and in ten days it was completed sufficiently to receive its commander. There was a fine expanse of water in front, the river being here nearly three miles broad, the sea breeze off which was refreshing and pure. The first thing to do now was to dig a deep ditch, both for the purposes of drainage and to obtain decent drinking and bathing water; but when found it resembled the colour of a strong mixture of brandy; the taste, however, was better than the appearance.

The vegetable matter lay more than a foot thick on the surface of this low soil, and its decomposition of course naturally affected the water, which was stagnant in many places. It is surprising how healthy these localities are, and free from fevers and ague, such complaints more frequently attacking the inhabitants further up the river, where the banks are high and dry and the water clear.

I was thrown more than ever on my own resources with the language, and found the Lingga Dyaks less amiable in their manners than the Lundus, with whom, however, they were friendly. They were much shyer, and had that general and most disagreeable idea that white men only came into their country for the purpose of making them presents, and this, in many cases, most effectually prevented me showing them much kindness. This tribe had always been friendly to the Rajah, to whose rule they owed so much, having been protected from the attacks of their direst enemy, the Saribus.

Within the last month three of the population had been carried off by alligators, either while fishing or when bathing at the landing places. These monsters, like most wild animals, after once having tasted human flesh, watch for it regularly ever afterwards; and the natives themselves will not take the

trouble to set traps for them unless rewarded, so a prize of two dollars a head was offered, and in the course of a short time four large ones were brought to me. They had been caught by common native wooden cross-piece hooks, which are lashed at the centre to twisted bark, answering the purpose of a rope, and so tough that the biting would fail to sever it; an animal as bait is then skewered with the wood, and is so managed that it shall enter the jaws of the alligator lengthways; the beast then feeling the hook, tries to emit it, but the wood, which is sharp at either end, becomes fixed across the throat, and the resistance made in its endeavours to be free only forces the points deeper into the flesh. At the other end of the twisted bark is a wooden buoy, which, when found, is towed to the banks of the river, and the animal hauled up to be dispatched. The bait being hung several feet above the surface of the water, from which the alligator springs to a considerable height, his enormous body falling with a splash to be heard at a great distance. The natives give them credit for much sagacity, and they are generally addressed as Rajah before their heads are cut off. I kept one for more than a week in a moat, fastened by an iron chain. It was about twelve feet long, and the fortmen intended to put it to death and gain the reward; but the evening

before the time appointed for its execution the beast managed to slip its chain and crawl through an opening in the enclosure, and so escaped. I had a small one about eight inches long for some days, and on decapitating it, a dog happened to pass, at which the jaws opened, and I foolishly put my finger inside the mouth, when the jaws shut, and the bite drew blood. The eyes were open all the while, and I was told by natives that large alligators had the power of opening and shutting their jaws for hours after their head had been cut off.

August, 1853.—I resolved with a friend to take an excursion among some of the Dyaks of the interior. We slept for one night in a Malay abode—I can't call it house—in a place named Kusing. The inmates (with whom in after years I became familiarly acquainted) were very kind, and made us as comfortable as they could; but the place was a wretched building, with only covering enough to keep out the rain, and destitute of comfort of any description. In the morning a beautiful orchid in full bloom was wafting the sweetest scent through the otherwise fusty dwelling. The flowers were picked for the purpose of being presented to us, but a crabbed old woman snatched them away, and offered instead two stale eggs. On proceeding up a narrow and much over-

grown stream, we passed one small rivulet tabooed, in consequence of a rich chief having lately died. There were some spears stuck into the bank, and poles fixed across. No one could break through these impediments, without incurring a severe fine; but when the time of mourning is expired, the relatives of the deceased poison the fish in the stream, and any of the population can be present to spear them, after which the taboo is opened.

The fish are poisoned by means of the tubar plant or certain fruits, which, after being beaten and pounded, are thrown into the river; the fish becoming stupefied, rise to the surface, when the people throw barbed spears, with buoyant bamboo staffs, so that in the event of the fish being wounded, the bamboo floats and is easily recovered. These streams are not supposed to have the taboo displaced till the successor to the dead man has obtained a head, and in preparation for the feasting of it he provides the fish of the tabooed stream.

Our pleasure was somewhat damped by a steady downfall of rain, causing everything to feel moist and uncomfortable even whilst under cover. In the evening we arranged a few pieces of wood and the mat covering of the boat on the bank of a river as our sleeping berth, and after a very scanty dinner retired

to rest, the rain continuing to pour. I had slept but a short time, when I was awakened by a disturbance among the men, who cried, "Sampada, sampada!" which was the name of a severe biting ant. On lifting the lamp, I saw a dense moving mass of these small creatures for many yards around, and one of my men brought a lighted log of wood, which he said would soon drive them away. It was placed between my friend and myself, and on moving to arrange it, one of the ants bit me, causing me to cry out. I never felt anything so acute in my life.

I was told to remain quiet; and, while viewing the surrounding enemy, judged it the best plan. The lighted log seemed more to attract than otherwise. I was holding the lamp, consisting of half a tumbler of rank-smelling cocoa-nut oil, when—another bite, and away went the oil all over myself, mat, and pillow, leaving me in total darkness; and then I did not know what to do, so remained as still as death, determined to die a martyr, for I could not go anywhere else without running the gauntlet of these tormentors.

The lads ran away, right and left, into the jungle, to wait until the insects had passed, and I sat in my position till morning.

My companion having remained still throughout

the night, escaped the infliction. These ants are the most determined enemies when attacked or in any way molested.

In the morning we both felt heavy and full of pains, from being half wet all night, but hot coffee restored our energies, and again we proceeded in our boat, and reached a Dyak house after a few hours, one of which was in sharp walking over hill and dale. This house contained thirty-eight doors, and the chief's name was Janang, who came forth to welcome us, as is their custom. Mats were instantly brought out from the inner room by the females, who rushed about, making a great fuss, in a way so natural to all female communities. Sirih and betel were placed in front of us, and, after a delicious bathe, we were very comfortable. The people sat at a respectful distance, and only the chief attended our wants, we being his guests. We conversed on a variety of topics; the principal one was their farming grounds, and the kind of crop they had received. The chief's wife brought out a child to show us, of which they were both very proud; but a more consummate lump of ugliness I never set eyes on. In the evening, we witnessed a poor sick woman being doctored. A decorated seat had been placed for her on the outer part of the house, and here she was seated, surrounded by

eight of the doctors, who were dressed in gorgeous clothes, and some in female costume. An umbrella was over the patient, and the doctors paraded around her, giving utterance to a monotonous kind of chant. In the first circuit they placed their hands on their heads; the second, on their eyes; the next, on their mouth; and so on, until they reached their knees; after which they lifted the woman from her seat, and swung her to and fro. This lasted for three hours, when I thought she would have died from exhaustion. The doctors were howling all night outside her door, and we heard she was better next morning. So much for imaginary satisfaction!

At early dawn we marched to a distant Dyak house at Empilih. The country we passed through was picturesque and undulating, the tops of all the hills being covered with old jungle, while on the sides there were large clearings for padi.

We rested in one long house on our way, and I was surprised to find what little notice the inmates took of our colour and appearance. It was the first time they had ever seen a white man, yet they were not shy nor obtrusive, behaving with an easy manner of politeness, offering us food and the few refreshments they possessed.

On reaching our destination, we received a surly welcome from a very crusty-looking old chief, and

before I had sat half-an-hour, I repented of having taken the trip. But it was too late to return that day, so there we passed the night. While lying down I could hear the old man talking in no very complimentary terms of myself and other white men. I felt disinclined to enter into converse with this old savage, and was glad to bid them all adieu the first thing in the morning, but was surprised to hear a salute fired after our departure, in compensation, I suppose, for the incivility he had shown while we were his guests. On my way back, I sat long one night with an old gentleman who gave me my first lesson in the Dyak language, and designated me an "Orang Bellanda," or Hollander, as we are generally known by the more ignorant. They have a notion that there is but one race of white men, and that race, Dutchmen, while Europe and Singapore are always classed together as being one place.

The Dyaks now brought their cases for settlement, and those for old debts were very numerous; more, indeed, than I could ever hope to settle, as the foul wrongs and practices of old times can be but partially rectified or altered.

The head Malay of the place had been in the habit of receiving as much revenue by regular means as he could force from the Dyaks and, in addition to this,

he oftentimes received sums of money from traders, who were then permitted to pass up the river, and carry on an extortionate trade among the Dyaks, while all others were prevented unless they paid a like amount to the chief. Government there was none, for every individual seemed to do the best with his own, and cared very little about his neighbours—fines being only imposed on the friendless and unprotected.

The most powerful of the people in the place were two old ladies, who often told me that all the land and inhabitants belonged to them; and of all the talkers in the world, I would back these old dames to be the most untiring. A continual prate from sunset till daylight was no unusual occurrence. Whenever they spoke of me, I was their son; but they hated me with no ordinary bitterness, so I was prepared to do battle with them shortly, only a few of their monstrous malpractices having as yet been brought before me.

A serious Dyak case occurred about this time. A Dyak doctor had engaged to attend on a sick man, and in the event of his remaining alive three days, a payment in jars was to be made as a fee. The three days expired, and the payment was made, when the patient died; upon which the son of the dead man, an impetuous young lad, demanded the restoration of the jars—a request the doctor refused to accede to. The

son drew his parang, and exclaiming "My name may return to the skies!" cut down the doctor, and severely wounded his son. Though neither was killed, the former received some fearful wounds over the face and shoulders.

The case was heard before the whole of the population, and the culprit fined three jars, or about 24*l.* This was the first serious charge brought before me in a judicial capacity. It really vexes one to hear of the superstitious absurdities the people practise, even those of rank and intelligence. For instance, I was told by a Pangeran, a blacksmith by trade, that he could not touch any ironwork without the body of his infant son turning the colour of fire; and on his lifting the hammer while engaged at his forge, the child instantly commenced screeching and crying.

September, 1853.—For my special amusement some of the Dyaks got up a party to snare deer. I was absent nearly three days, in a small low boat, by the side of swamps, during which the annoyance from mosquitoes was intense, with feverishness at night generally as the consequence.

Before the snares were laid out, the old man said seriously, "Remember, while we are watching for the deer, you must on no account cough, or strike at a mosquito, as the noise would frighten them." We

caught one large doe, and then returned; but I must confess the sport was as slow as anything could be, the only exciting part of it being when the deer rushes into the snare, and with the tremendous impetus, he is generally thrown backwards; then the watcher rushes up and cuts down the beast. But there is considerable danger of becoming entangled in the nooses, or of coming in contact with the deer as he is madly tearing about in his endeavours to escape.

The watching in deathlike silence, up to one's knees in water, was the provoking part; such sport does not deserve the patience and exposure. My next trip in search of game was to Sibuyau, a small stream at the mouth of the Batang Lupar. We found out a large open piece of marshy ground, and I had the satisfaction of hearing a deer, but failed to get a shot at him. Our intention was to stay the night here, and watch for their coming to drink or bathe, but the old rotten wooden sleeping place looked such a likely spot for snakes and other pestiferous vermin (to which I was not yet inured), that I persuaded my followers to return at sunset, and after an hour's brisk walking, darkness came on. The Dyak guides remained in front as long as the light lasted, but after dusk they dropped to the rear, and I believe they would have remained there all night had they been by themselves, having a peculiar

aversion to walking in the dark. We soon began to puzzle over our path, and discussions arose about it; though but a short distance, it occupied us till near midnight. We could distinctly hear voices in the boats, but it was next to impossible to proceed in this marshy swamp, where the underwood and thorny palms were so thickly intertwined. Several times after having placed my feet on something sharp, I took a header among them. That evening I resolved never to try jungle walking at night again, particularly without shoes, a part of dress I had relinquished since living among Dyaks; the thorns had entered my skin from head to foot, and fully a month elapsed before I got rid of them all. While proceeding inland we passed several orang-utans (Maias); on one tree a large family was assembled. I counted eight of them in all, three old ones, and the remainder of them young; they showed no signs of fear, but sat looking at us with their peculiarly grave faces, and it would have seemed natural if these pictures of humanity had hailed us in some language of their own. Unless for the sake of scientific research, it is nearly barbarous killing these animals, or even monkeys, for that they have many of the impressions and sensations of human beings no one can doubt who has examined their habits, together with the continual change of expres-

sion of countenance, all so plainly superior to the habits of the other tribes of creation. The next morning we clambered three small hills in search of Argus pheasants, and though we heard their plaintive cries in many directions, not a sight of one could be obtained.

On returning to Lingga the same day, we raced with a boat pulled by lusty Dyak females, who had been gathering oysters from the rocks at the mouth; they fairly beat us in speed, and it was amusing to watch their gravity of countenance while using the paddle and sitting upright as statues.

> "She with her paddling oar and dancing prow,
> Shot through the surf like a reindeer through the snow."

After we reached the landing-place, I presented them with some tobacco, then they broke out into laughter, quizzing my crew for allowing themselves to be beaten by women. These wenches were better looking than most of the herd.

December, 1853.—The Rajah and several other Europeans, with boats of Saráwak Malays, called at Lingga, on their way to Sakarang, and I joined them; we spent one night in Mr. Brereton's fort, and then proceeded up the river, where we had some idea of meeting a formidable enemy, of whom we had received

several reports the previous night. This was the first force that had entered this river with Europeans since the attack in the "Dido's" boats, when Messrs. Wade and Steward were killed. We stopped at Tabarong, where a boom had been placed across the river to prevent the enemy from passing down; and here we held several conciliatory conferences with the enemy, who were in armed force some distance above us. Sometimes they promised to come and be friends, at others they demurred, excusing themselves with various inconsistent reasons.

Three days passed in this manner, and each day must have brought a dozen newsmongers at least, all with contradictory reports. Despotism I dislike; but forbearance does not go beyond a certain point in the management of Dyaks, who have the feelings of children; kindness and severity must proceed hand in hand with such a people. We then retired, after having been told that the chiefs could not be our friends, although they did not profess to be open enemies. Rentap and Bulan were their leaders; the former being the active and subtle warrior, and the latter the passive and cautious looker-on, seeing how events would eventually resolve themselves, undecided to take a side with either party, but waiting to see who would prove victorious. These half friends

have always been very dangerous, and far more difficult to deal with than open enemies.

While living in boats our amusements were reading, bathing, and watching the nice-looking Dyak damsels descend to landing-places night and morning to draw water, and adorn themselves, which they regularly did without any needless shyness.

After this fruitless attempt to bring about better relations between the inland Dyaks and ourselves, we returned to our several homes and occupations.

While on a second visit to Sibuyau, I had an opportunity of seeing much more of the people and country. On entering into the first house, I was surprised to find the people so downcast and sullen; and on making inquiry as to the cause, they told me the farms had not yielded a sufficient quantity of padi to keep them throughout the year. The inmates said there had been an "Antu" dwelling among them for some years, who had brought evil upon everything. This Antu was in the shape of a human being who lived at the head of the river, and they begged me to punish him severely as I proceeded onwards. They added, wherever he casts his eyes, destruction followed. I condoled with them, and endeavoured to reason about the matter being impossible. This was, however, useless, as they remarked, "Ah! but you

cannot understand us; we have different habits to the white people." After some conversation they gradually became amiable, and I heard no more of the Antu; but in all such cases, no indifference should be displayed by a stranger; a regard for their feelings will soon attract their sympathy, and be the means of drawing attention to what is told them: but any sudden thwarting causes obstinacy in their superstitious minds, as yet unamenable to reason.

While proceeding up the river we started a few alligators, but failed in killing any. The river rapidly became narrower, and was fringed by a beautiful pale green moss, which afforded some variety from the colours of the old jungles. The tracks of deer were very numerous, but only the tracks, the animals themselves not being forthcoming. Our food consisted of fresh fish, of which we caught abundance by means of a hand net, whenever we stopped.

The houses that we entered at a place called Kadumpai, were very prettily situated among high hills, with running falls of water pouring down under the shady fruit-trees. The head man, "Gamang," became a great friend of mine. He had remarkably [illegible]sant manners, with good sense. He said, "You [illegible] have sent word that you intended to pay us a [illegible] I would have come down with my followers

SARÁWAK RIVER SCENERY.

(Vol. I, p. 105.)

to fetch you, and fired off guns, instead of your entering my house, and finding me fast asleep." In the afternoon I drifted down, with one follower, in a small sampan on a stream (running through an extensive grass plot) in search of deer, but to no purpose. At night we sat and chatted until a late hour. The next day I marched some eighteen miles over hill and dale, and the Dyaks gave me much information as to their customs; and while hearing the chirps of their omen birds, they did not fail to initiate me into their peculiarities. We saw and entered some dirty Dyak houses on the hills, the deficiency of water accounting for the want of cleanliness. Some of the views were gloriously beautiful; and man, in such a position, feels himself to be a little bit of pure nature. While coming back, a great variety of monkeys showed themselves on the banks; and on one very large one presenting himself, I took a deliberate aim and fired, and he fell. Anything more like a child would be difficult to find. It was one of the long nose species, standing about three feet high, with very prettily-formed legs (fat and round); the nose was loose, without the development of bone found in a human face; but, altogether, I was glad to leave such a spectacle, and it was some time before I could obliterate the object and idea from my mind. I called again at the house which the "Antu"

was supposed to frequent. This time both females and men came down to my boat with presents of rice, fowls, almond oil, &c. I felt I had made an impression on their hearts, and had banished the spirit. These people have suffered most from the depredations of Saribus and Sakarang Dyaks, and few have any heirlooms left. Their houses have repeatedly been plundered and burnt down, and their poor scattered tribe would soon have become extinct if the Rajah's Government had not protected them.

April, 1854.—We now attended to the frequent representations of Mr. Brereton and the friendly chiefs in the Sakarang district, of the disturbed state of the country in a place named Dandi, which contained a long Dyak house, headed by a refractory leader, "Pa Dendang." It is situated upon a hill which forms a backbone, and from being located between the two streams, served to keep both Sakarang and Saribus in a continual state of ferment. A force was raised in Saráwak for the purpose of strengthening the Sakarang people sufficiently to drive this dangerous character from his abode. After the boats were prepared, the expedition started from Saráwak, with Mr. —— as our leader and commander-in-chief.

I felt anxious to witness the forthcoming encounter, as this was the first time I had had an opportunity of

following an expedition against a Dyak enemy, and the idea of sporting my new accoutrements and arms (all with the latest and best improvements) was, to say the least, a pleasing sensation. The force from Lingga joined that of Saráwak, and both proceeded up the Batang Lupar, which is a noble stream for some distance, and then becomes dangerous, on account of its narrow and rapid channels, throwing up a bubble of a sea, in which only a high boat can stand. The swift eddies and whirl of waters rushing round some of the sharp points, both with the flood and ebb tides, are exceedingly awkward, as a touch on the sand is sufficient to roll a boat over. Few could be saved, as skill in swimming would in such a boiling and bubbling together of waters be almost useless.

Many of the inhabitants are drowned; and my naval experience I found to be quite out of place in having to cope with the seas in a river, the natives being the only pilots. On our force reaching within a few miles of Mr. Brereton's fort at the mouth of Sakarang, we found many of those Dyaks in their large boats ready to receive and escort us to the town, and the contrast between these finely-painted and natty-looking praus and our heavy Banting boats was striking. As with the boats, so also with the men. The Sakarangs were some shades lighter in colour, and were adorned

with red and yellow clothes, and with brass wire on the arms and under their knees. In their ears they wore a set of rings, the lower one being the largest, gradually decreasing in size towards the tip. The effect is not displeasing when they are in full dress ; but the ear is much disfigured when deprived of its decoration, there being a row of small holes, in which they fix pieces of wood to keep them open, and the brass frequently produces ulcerated sores and discoloured places about their flesh. The Sakarang tribe are allowed to be nice-looking, and are particularly noticeable for their agility, coupled with elegance of gait. The meeting of these two tribes (Banting and Sakarang), who had been on terms of deadly feud for generations past, was far from amicable : the former, to whom I was then attached, denying the Sakarangs to have a single virtuous quality. They were cowardly traitors—crafty, false, and never to be trusted. The Bantings drew their boats quietly under the banks of the river, or advanced at a distance, when the Sakarang party were being noticed. The latter were bright with flags and pennants of every description, from the British Royal standard or a pocket handkerchief, downwards.

The Orang Kaya Gassing was dressed with some cast-off habiliments of an European, which had been

gaudy once, but now looked much as if the dress and its contents were intended as a scarecrow to drive birds off a pea bed.

On arriving at the fort at Sakarang, we found a large concourse of Malays, seated in chairs the whole length of the audience hall. They shook hands with us all, asking the common questions—"Where did you start from?" and "What is the news?" Our commander then sat a short time with them, and conversed a little with the head man. The old Seriff Mullah, who had been burnt out in the "Dido's" expedition, was now living quietly here with his family, without much power to do good or harm. He was very much out of humour, I thought, as he perpetually grumbled, in a whining tone, of sickness, poverty, and old age. He soon rose to bid adieu, and retired, most of the others following his example. The gongs, native drums, and a small instrument which sounded like cymbals, were merrily, but not very musically, playing in all directions; and our party of whites betook themselves to the inner section of the fort, and arranged mats for reading and sleeping. It is surprising what a quantity of both one can do in such a place as an out-station, either when starting or stopping during an expedition. Sleeping, however, far exceeds the reading. Without the precincts of privacy, crowds

of natives immediately surround one to shake hands, and ask ever so many irrelevant questions, some in languages I did not then know. If no reply is made, they imagine one is not pleased, and think you angry or distant. This to a shy individual is very disagreeable; but fortunately all our party were not shy. They could encounter all these little difficulties with open face, and push their way onward, so as to be useful in many ways:—such as arrangement of arms, ammunition, reception of parties, with the one or two simple words required to soothe and satisfy them, management of boats, division of provisions, prevention of indiscriminate advance, choice of guides, preparation of gear for an inland march, and making many necessary inquiries concerning route, &c., &c. A pocket-book should never be out of hand, as names and numbers, new localities, on river and land, are too perpetually being used, to remain in the memory.

After remaining here two days, we advanced up the Sakarang stream as far as a place named Lipat, where there were a few friendly Dyak houses, one of which belonged to an old man named Linghi, the oldest friend to the white man there is on the river. He had already met and embraced us with as much polish of manner and polite bearing as you would see exhibited by a Frenchman or Italian. It is a common

way of salutation among the Dyaks. Old Linghi was a little wizened, small-pox-marked fellow, long past middle age, an inveterate talker, and as merry as possible on every occasion—asking a string of questions without much meaning attached to any of them. He was followed by two fine-looking sons, who were of the same cheerful appearance as himself, though much his superior in every way.

We were to start on our march the next morning, and in the evening amused ourselves by visiting the Dyak houses. We were all particularly struck by their kindly bearing—loading us with presents, and very desirous of making themselves agreeable. In one house, while we were sitting and listening more than talking, as few of our party could enter into familiar conversation in their language, one young fellow brought us a present of some fowls, and holding a white one by the legs, he waved it over our heads, repeating words of friendship and lasting peace between us. This is a common custom at their feasts, and is supposed to conduce to good and friendly feeling, and to prevent either party from quarrelling and fighting.

The morning opened clear, without a cloud, when all parties prepared themselves for the march. As soon as I was ready with the Lingga division, we

assembled under the shade of a large tree. The three old Malay chiefs that accompanied my party, were objects for a picture. They had dressed themselves in thickly-quilted mattrass jackets and hats, which are very heavy, but supposed to be a protection against spears and Sumpit arrows. But their weight in walking, after rain, or when soaked with perspiration, must interfere a good deal with their usefulness in other respects. Each man had his sword and gun, or spear. The Dyaks are all armed with swords, and five or six spears, some of iron, others only of pointed strips of the hardest part of the palms. Shields of different breadths, to protect the body, were made of very light wood, woven together with rattans, to prevent their falling to pieces in the event of their being split. The Sakarang Dyaks, however, again formed the gayest part of our force—for bright and varied colours were everywhere distinguishable. But, in addition to their native costume, some wore soldiers' jackets, and many other incongruous mixtures, such as shakoes, or large white tufts for epaulettes, making their appearance ridiculous in the extreme. Our path led principally through old farming grounds, but for the first few miles there were only felled trees to walk on, over a low marshy swamp. This style of walking is particularly irksome to a heavy, stiff-jointed European,

wearing shoes. Some of the trunks were of considerable height above ground, and a fall from them would be unpleasant, when loaded with pouches full of ammunition, and carrying heavy rifles as well as revolvers. Such marching would be an impossibility to troops, with their knapsacks, provisions, and cumbrous accoutrements. One of our small party had to return, as he found this monkeyish travelling too much for his nervous system—falling off repeatedly about every six steps; ultimately, he gave it up as a bad business. The rest of us managed pretty well, and when past these walking-sticks, we came out on hilly, open farming ground, with a piercing mid-day sun shining on our heads. However, the distance was not great, and early in the afternoon we came to a halt in a long empty house, lately vacated by Sakarang Dyaks who had been enemies. There were no peculiarities to be remarked in the country of to-day. The backbone high hills were yet some miles away. In the morning there was a council of war held on the ground, where all such grave debates are discussed; a running, stream was passing between two hills, and our concourse was assembled on the sides of each. I sat in the background, listening to what passed, and I knew enough of the language to follow the thread of the discourse pretty accurately. The spokesmen on

[illegible]e were Malay, Dyak, and Sakarang who knew the country and the business in hand better than any one else. They represented the force accompanying the expedition as too numerous to make an attack on a Dyak enemy of only one long house, and thought it better that the Saráwak part of it, with the Europeans (who, they concluded, were not much accustomed to walk over such a country), should remain quietly where they were, and permit the active part of the body to advance under the direction of the Sakarang leader. This arrangement was finally agreed to. The party were to start the next morning, and leave us in the lurch in a dull spot bedded with long grass. We despatched another party to the boat for provisions.

The fighting division started, and we slept all day, or wandered listlessly about, not much pleased at the turn matters had taken, as we little dreamt of any resistance now from an enemy. At night we had an alarm in the camp; it was the first I had witnessed of the kind. Sounds first arose from the people who were on the outer part of our circle, and lying on the ground. The din gradually increased; then there were yells, accompanied by moans and groans, until the whole force was a living mass of turmoil and noise, exasperation and confusion—seizing their arms, firing muskets off in any and every direction, holding

spear-staffs in hurling position, much to the detriment of their nearest neighbour's eyes. Then there was tapping of the shield, to excite men to brave acts, and waving of swords by people dancing madly about in menacing attitudes. In such scenes the aged and experienced chiefs try to restore order, but in doing so they often only make more noise than the others. Our party of white men were looking eagerly on from the house, with arms ready to encounter the most ferocious enemy. None, however, appeared, and the sounds gradually melted away, peace and sleep again resuming their sway. It was at least a little excitement, and only proved what an excessive noise a large party of fools can make. Late in the afternoon of the third day, when we anxiously awaited the return of the advanced division, our outposts first of all descried two or three small parties of Dyaks, evidently of our force, wending their way slowly over hill and dale. On their nearer approach, we plainly saw wounded carried by them. This sight caused an extra anxiety among our party. The wounded heroes passed on direct for home. Whispers spread—gradually and quietly, at first, but they soon became more distinct—that our party had failed. In the evening the chiefs arrived, and came forward to report progress, looking haggard, thin, and exhausted. The story was as follows: they had walked at a

fast pace the whole of the first day over the steepest hills, sometimes without any path, and the guides at a non-plus for the proper direction; from morning till night they had scarcely halted, under a scorching sun, and parched with thirst, without any hope of water. At night, by moonlight, they pushed on again, until they nearly fell from exhaustion, when they slept in any position with their arms on. While in this situation a panic arose among them, and some of the Dyaks while closing with each other, fell off a declivity and did not recover themselves till late the following day. About 3 A.M. they again advanced, and at the opening of dawn the most active Dyaks reaching the enemy's house, advanced upon it without order, and as the leaders were mounting the ladder, they were struck off one after another by hundreds of men inside, dressed in fighting costume, and headed by the whole of the chiefs of Saribus, men heretofore on every occasion, on land, victorious. Our poor leaders had to retire to guard their wounded and dying, while the enemy were yelling, cheering, and beating gongs; and even their women, dressed in their best clothes, were clapping their hands, and urging their sweethearts to the encounter. As the sun arose, some of the strongest of the Malay force came up within shot, and took up their quarters behind trunks of trees, and opened fire upon

the house; this stopped the cheering within, but in no way daunted the enemy. About an hour after, our elderly chiefs came up, viewed the house of the enemy, sat down on the hill-side in a sheltered position, and were so exhausted that children might have hacked their heads off. They stopped all advance of their party, and while the oldest chiefs were suffering severely from fatigue, a palaver was opened, the result being that some of them came down, mixed with our people, then partook of sirih and betel nut in a friendly manner, and promised to show our party the nearest way back, and provide them with provisions for their journey. On their part, they engaged to be answerable for the payment of a Pati Niawa, or "a fine for death," for the men they had killed some months previously. And thus ended this glorious encounter, much to our credit as peaceably-disposed people.

We lost a gallant chief of the Undup tribe, and some others. The guides had been severely wounded, and all were savage in the extreme. The enemy behaved in a most polite and chivalric manner; their tone was, "You have all made a great mistake in coming, but we are above taking a mean advantage of it; we escort you for the purpose of placing you in the proper road for returning as quickly as possible." Old Pa Dendang had heard of our advance since the

time of our departure from Sakarang, had then sounded his gongs, and been reinforced by all the bravest men from Saribus, the principal leaders of every head-hunting expedition on the coast.

We had shown a fatal want of discretion in the whole affair: no trustworthy guides, no inquiry of the enemy's position respecting the Saribus Dyaks known to be hostile to us, a heedless hurrying on without plan or order,—a dead failure, with loss of life, being the consequence. We returned home with feelings that can be better imagined than described. The Dyaks said, "birds and dreams had been 'angat' (hot), consequently bad;" the Malays said, "if they had only been there, the result would have been different;" and Europeans said—nothing.

May, 1854.—A disastrous and shameful attack was made by a party of Batang Lupar Dyaks, in Saráwak territory, on a house of Bugau Dyaks under Dutch jurisdiction; the attack was made while the men were absent at their farms. Thirty women and children were killed and taken captive. I sent letters to request that the offenders should be brought to justice and severely punished, as well as deprived of the captives. A fine was demanded, but our means of supporting the demand were small and inadequate, and the Dyaks consulted their time and convenience

in making the payments. Patience was the order of the day, and our steps were slow though sure; and any precipitation in furthering the ends of justice would only have endangered our lives and those of our followers.

Some months subsequently, when I was living in Sakarang, I obtained two of these captives, named Bungun and Luyau. When brought to the fort they wept, and one declared he would poison himself if he was not permitted to return; but I understood that they had been primed with what to say, and had been led to believe that they would suffer death in my hands. One little fellow, on being left, jumped from the top of the wall into the moat, which was full of spikes, but fortunately he received no injury, and was brought back. I had engaged to detain them for one month, at the end of which they should return to their Dyak masters if they chose. The boys soon dried their tears and took up their quarters with me; I gave them thirty slips of paper to count the days by throwing one away every morning; they behaved very well, and examined all my belongings with considerable interest, saying they had never seen or heard of any such things before. The casting away of the paper lasted five consecutive mornings, when they forgot all about the time, and were happy, calling me "Apai"

—Father. Their great amusement was looking at pictures; and a volume of "Punch" afforded them endless conversation. I grew to be very fond of one, Bungun, who was a particularly nice, thoughtful lad; the other was a pickle. After the first fortnight, they would not hear of returning to the people who, they said, had killed so many of their relations. After living three months with me, happy and contented, Bungun's father came to fetch him. I was loth to lose the boy, who had become quite a companion; he told me when leaving, "we shall not forget you, but soon come again." Ten years after, in 1863, the same two paid me a visit, and on their entrance into my sitting-room embraced me with every sign of affection. They had grown into fine men, but were otherwise very little altered, and I immediately recognised them, as they did all the old furniture in my room, pointing directly to the picture of the Rajah, to the rugs they had used as beds, and to two heads cast in plaster. They spent three days with me on that occasion. I felt I possessed an influence around any place where those two lads lived, for Dyaks are not ungrateful, although generally undemonstrative.

A large expedition had been preparing for some weeks in Saráwak, to make a deliberate attack in the interior of Sakarang, where Rentap was gradually

obtaining a more dangerous influence; and little could be done with any of the surrounding Dyaks so long as these rebellious ones were holding out against the Government.

August, 1854.—The Rajah, in company with the Europeans, arrived and proceeded to Sakarang, myself accompanying them; the force was very large, and all in fine boats, well armed, and equipped in every article and munition. The pomp and panoply of war were displayed in various ways, and all took pride in themselves. When all the things were served out, and the commissariat properly arranged, we started, and made way as far as Entaban, where a great conference was to be held. The large boats left, as they could not be taken further, and our whole force went to work to cut down jungle and make a large clearance, after which fortifications were erected, with a house for the Rajah, who intended remaining here, and sending the force on in charge of Mr. Brooke Brooke.

The conference, as usual, was held on the ground: first of all the Rajah addressed them in a few words, telling them our enemies were numerous up the river, and he trusted to his people to attack and defeat them. Panglima Seman then passionately exclaimed, "that he was ready with all his heart, and if he took captives he wished to be permitted to keep them as

slaves." Next the great question to be settled was, our mode of advancing, as to the roads and means of getting up to the enemy. This was discussed very fully by all parties, and we finally arranged that one half of the force should go by land and the other by water, there not being a sufficient number of suitable boats to carry the whole party. We were all well and in excellent spirits, except Mr. Brereton, who remained in his boat, owing to sickness. The next morning at an early hour, all was bustle in cooking and preparing, and we trusted to the calculating genius of Mr. Spenser St. John to arrange our commissariat, and he deserved great credit for the foresight displayed in this important department.

The Sakarang force kept to boats, while we plodded over the banks, sometimes in good clear paths among fruit-trees, and then again over the most rugged places. We had Dyak guides, and could not have proceeded without them. Our land force consisted mostly of Malays, and numbered about 500 men; about four in the afternoon we halted on the brink of the river, and prepared to spend the night, with a stockade around. This was in the enemy's country, although there were many people living near, who were neither the one thing nor the other. The following morning we proceeded again in the same order, but before mid-day many of our

party were quite exhausted, and there was really no road to follow but the muddy banks of the river, so we halted, and after our mid-day meal it was decided we were all to crowd in with our floating force. And thus we pushed on, but in a most comfortless condition with regard to space. We spent the night at Tabbat, and fortified ourselves here also. My subsequent experience of the localities has proved that we should never have reached our destination on foot, keeping company with the boats. This, the Sakarang Malays were perfectly aware of at the time, and in consequence they kept to their boats. Dyaks might have walked it in ten days, but with Europeans and Malays (many of whom felt the first day's fatigue) it was simply impossible. On the fourth day we spied the enemy's position, situated on a hill cleared of all old jungle, and showing recent preparations of defence around their dwellings. Our heavy armament consisted of four and three pounder guns and rocket tubes.

The enemy showed no opposition outside, and after marching about four miles, we arrived at a hill in their vicinity. It was a fiery hot morning, without a cloud, and the hills, though low, were very precipitous. The Europeans kept near the guns, to assist in their progress up the steeps, and when we

were mounting the last rising ground, on which the enemy was fortified, we found some of the leaders of our force had foolishly advanced too near, and a few had been killed and wounded, and were now being carried to the rear. The enemy had two long houses on the ridge of a hill, surrounded by steep ground, excepting at the end. Here high stakes were driven into the earth, and around all a firm and thick stockade. The 4-pounder gun was mounted after considerable delay, and when the rocket tube was in place, we opened fire on one end, while the 3-pounder played away on the other. The enemy answered our fire pretty briskly with their Lelahs. We could see the men rushing to and fro covered by their shields, also parties dancing to the music of gongs. Some of their voices we heard distinctly, saying they would never succumb to the tight-breeched men (white men) or to any other strangers. Mr. Crookshank (at considerable risk) took charge of the rockets, which were of ancient make, and a few that were fired entered the fort and did great execution, but the majority whizzed round and round, and sometimes lodged in the ground among our own party; we were all more afraid of these missiles than anything the enemy could produce. Early in the afternoon there was a commotion among them, and we could discern women and children

leaving on the opposite side of the hill, but the men still stood fast and kept to their posts. Our old Panglima (warrior) was biding his time, for he yet knew that he might lead, but others would not follow. He worked steadily and quietly, amid many jeers from some of our own native party, who asked why the warrior did not make an advance: his reply between his teeth was—"your words are more than your deeds." The surrounding hills, all along the edges of the old jungle, were lined with men dressed in red jackets. They had come from all parts of the interior, and were waiting to see which party would prove victorious. If we had retreated, they were ready to molest us, and cut off as many as they could, and they were quite beyond the reach of any injury from us. As the sun drew near to the horizon, the Panglima moved up to the enemy's stockade, silently opened the palisade, and after a moment's peep, jumped in, followed by others, who gave a loud cheer and drew their swords. The enemy finding a lodgment had been made inside, immediately took to their heels, and fled down the hill.

We followed in, close on the leaders; the entrance was so narrow, that many received severe contusions when passing through. About fifty or sixty of the enemy were tearing away over the open ground,

covering their bodies with their shields. Now arose a dreadful scene of confusion and uproar, which lasted till night, and we were glad to find a small nook where we could dine and sleep with moderate comfort. The night was so cold as to keep me awake for the greater part of it. With the next morning came the disagreeable work of persuading the men to carry back the guns and their paraphernalia. We heard in the course of the day, that Rentap and his followers had retired to a stronghold about half way up the mountain of Sadok which loomed in the distance. Our force was in too disturbed a state to make any organised attack, so after making a circuit of devastation for a few miles, we went down the river. So ended the attack on Sungei Lang, which was successful, as a commencement in bringing the up-river inhabitants into subjection. We found, on rejoining the Rajah, that many reports had been spread of our defeat and death.

In passing down towards Sakarang, we met with several narrow escapes, as the river had been much swollen by continued rains, and rendered our position very unenviable, four of us being crammed into a good-sized box, minus the lid. This was a sort of cabin for the Nakoda of the boat; in our case we were forced to sit with our knees up to our chins; however, the fresh carried us down at a great pace.

We stopped for some hours at one spot, until it somewhat subsided, as trees were now in the water, and one touch would have capsized us, in which case we should probably have all been drowned.

After joining the Rajah, we returned to our several comfortable boats, and glided down to the upper Sakarang fort, where we landed and slept one night, after spending a merry evening. Many houses that we passed resounded with the monotonous wail of woe over relations killed in the late action, and others again were yelling with joy, and beating all their musical instruments. There was one poor old woman, lying not far from us, weeping in the most distressing manner for the loss of her husband, who died from wounds immediately after his entrance into the house. We condoled with her, but to no effect. She seemed inconsolable, and continued to evince her grief by groaning violently. One of our party offered her a glass of brandy, and within five minutes she calmly sunk into sleep. On the return of the expedition, dysentery broke out, and many deaths ensued. Among those who succumbed was our much-lamented friend and brother officer, Mr. Brereton, who had been unwell for some time previous to the attack on Sungei Lang. Many other Europeans suffered severely, and the natives declared the enemy had poisoned us all; but

this was certainly not the case. Extra exposure to cold, heat, and wet was doubtless the cause; for often we slept in hard rains, and on awaking in the morning found pools of water had collected on our rugs. It had been settled that no other land expedition of the kind was to be again organised, there being too much risk to the lives of Europeans to be encountered both from the enemy and the climate of the interior.

During my many quiet hours at Lingga, I really believe few of God's creatures could have eaten his own heart as I did. I even welcomed the coming of an old Dyak woman (without a tooth in her head) to be my companion. But at many other times, when the people were not employed at their farms, they would arrive by tens and twenties, with each ebb tide, and bring all their cases of debt and quarrelling to me for settlement. There happened, among the Dyaks, a case of Taboo or "Ulit," as the Dyaks call it. The wife of a man had lately died, and the husband, without going through the proper modes, after a month, took unto himself another wife, and so gave great offence to the people around. However, as the delinquent had powerful relations, he declined any payment for acting contrary to custom. Properly speaking, he should have given a feast in the first instance, and afterwards awaited the arrival of an enemy's head, by which the

spirits of death would have been appeased. The chiefs brought the complaint of this man's disobedience to me; and on hearing the pros and cons, one good-natured old chief exclaimed, "What matters! let us follow the customs of the white men, who are never 'Ulit.'" However, as the majority of the party were for the support of their forefathers' customs, I sided with them, and the man was punished according to Dyak law, and had to pay one fowl, one pig, and a small piece of iron. In a subsequent conversation on the subject of this "Ulit" (which has led to so much trouble in New Zealand), I begged the chiefs would seriously think of timing the mourning of any parties who lost relations by death; by this method they would not require the heads of enemies to open "Ulit." I asked them from what part they could obtain heads after all their enemies had been conquered. This view of the matter, however, did not meet with their approval, nor with any very favourable result in their minds. Most of them remarked, "What say the multitude?" For they have a great respect for established modes among themselves.

I gradually made many friends among the people, particularly the female part of the community. I soon learnt that great power and influence attached to their opinions on matters in general, and that to

stand well with them was more than half any Dyak battle.

A boat of Lingga Chinamen, on returning from Saráwak, had mysteriously disappeared about six weeks ago, and I had concluded she had been swamped or driven off the coast under stress of weather. I, however, have now received a much more probable report. A party of Saribus Dyaks, who were in Saráwak at the time, had studiously followed in the wake of this boat, after finding she possessed a valuable cargo, and while the Chinamen were anchored in a small uninhabited stream, the Dyaks crept into the boat, cut all their heads off, and carried the cargo and boat into Saribus. The party who perpetrated this deed lived far in the interior, up a branch stream named Tabalau. It was hopeless at that time to seek for redress, although the poor relations and friends of the five deceased complained most bitterly. We were powerless in Saribus, and no trustworthy or honest men could live in such a hornets' nest. I took a careful note of this proceeding, resolving to punish the offenders on a future day, when hope assured me we should have the head hunters more fully within our grasp.

As has already been mentioned, the most influential and distinguished of the Lingga population were two

old Malay ladies, who had held the government here for many years. When I first arrived they paid me frequent visits, and their powers of conversation were so hopelessly unlimited, as to become extremely disagreeable and tedious; occasional naps being the only relief during their stay. On re-awaking every time, their tongues were invariably moving; and whether awake or asleep, it was quite immaterial to them.

Their remarks generally had reference to the people on the coast, on whom they made sweeping claims as slaves and followers, to the number of many thousands. In fact, they led one to suppose the whole country belonged to them, with every one in it. These old lasses, however, were not without some sterling qualities besides the tongue: for on more than one occasion, when the Saribus forces had been making an attack on Banting, they were to be seen dressed in men's clothes, with swords and spears in hand, commanding the people, and working as hard as any of them. But they were only endurable while such disturbed times lasted. And now the day had arrived when their tether was to be sadly curtailed. Such tyranny as they were in the habit of displaying could no longer be permitted. They practised the blackest arts for the purpose of gathering into their net everybody for whom they had a fancy. They first

of all asked them to their house, and then provided the means of detention, under a pretext of their having committed some overt act, for which they were to be fined. The consequence was, that they were afterwards slave debtors, who when males, married some of their women, and *vice versâ*. The children of these marriages would in future augment their following.

This was only one of their female eccentricities. The head man of the place had died a few months before my arrival, and many of the inhabitants went so far as to declare he had been poisoned by these old vixens. His little son had become my protégé. When first brought to me on his mother's back, he looked as if he were not likely to remain long in this world, and there was a suspicion that he was to be removed quietly from the scene, as he had a right to a few slaves, as well as some goods, all of which had been seized and purloined by these avaricious dames. The son soon recovered, and has been my steady follower for the ten years since, during which he has never shown ingratitude for a most providential escape out of the hands of his enemies at Lingga. It would have been impossible to defend his rights against them. Even with grown up individuals it required more than ordinary power of intellect and courage. Several respectable natives were obliged to quit the country owing to quarrels

with these female chiefs, and a refusal to participate in their dishonest proceedings. I remained on good terms with them so long as no actually flagrant event arose to bring us into collision. When settling any cases, I refused to have them present, or to acknowledge their authority. Ere many months had elapsed, some of the victims' stories had found their way to my ears. In many cases they were too brutal to be related, for it was the worst kind of slavery I have known before or since in these countries. In fact, it was quite exceptional, and not the rule. A trivial matter was the means of opening the first fire. A woman, who had been a follower of theirs, came to me with a baby in arms, that was suffering severely from sore eyes. Having some medicine at hand, I was enabled to afford relief to the little creature; this was repeated for several days, until the mother became more confident and accustomed to visit me in my solitary abode. On one occasion, in the course of conversation, she told me in confidence, two women would give anything to relate their grievances to me. Both, when children, had been made captives from the Saribus river, now many years ago—since that time they had been living as slaves, and treated with every kind of harshness and severity, without hope of any change for the better. "One," she said, "had been

sent up the river that morning, because she had refused to be sold into a trader's hands, and for wishing to bring a complaint to me; the other was guarded in the house, and had been beaten and otherwise treated in a shameful way." After hearing this, I sought to ascertain the truth of the speaker's statement, and made inquiry whether the woman had been offered for sale; there was little doubt about it, as, when the inquiry was being made, the woman in question was going out of the river in a stranger boat, having been dragged from her hiding-place and forcibly taken on board the prahu, which was bound for a distant place on the coast. I sent a force after them, and brought back the unfortunate, with an infant in arms; and the day after the chiefs were assembled, and the other woman summoned from Dang Ajar's house. Now the chain of the ladies' power was to be snapped asunder. The chiefs heard the woman's story. She said that "only two mornings ago, her mistress, while in a fit of jealousy, because her husband had shown her some trivial marks of attention and kindness, had stood over her with a large stick, threatening to strike her over the head if she did not swallow some most offensive and filthy mixture," which was held in a cocoa-nut shell by this she-devil. The result was, the poor girl was forced to swallow it. She showed her head, with

half the hair torn out, and all wounded and scarred. I freed both on the spot, and made known, that whoever molested them for the future would incur a fine. The old ladies I heard were furious, and I was cautioned not to partake of any fruit or sweets they might present to me, and not to drink water drawn from my usual drinking well, about which they had made some suspicious inquiries. Before two months were over, ten men and women, on whom they had no claim whatever, were released from their clutches. They threatened to leave Lingga, and some of their staunchest friends and supporters said, "it would be better to eat dirt than live anywhere in the vicinity of a white man." After a short time their anger subsided, and the old ladies then sought occupation in studying Mahomedan scriptures—repeating their prayers regularly seven times daily. In this edifying and delightful manner they still pass their time.

CHAPTER IV.

Sakarang—First Dyak case—Dyak memory—Letters—Sandom's occupation—His stealth—Alarm—Craving for head hunting—Mode of stoppage—Collection of heads—Punishment—Aing's value—Reducing a Dyak to reason—Quarrel and life taken—Heavy fine—Its efficacious result—Dyak peccadillo—The father suffers for the daughter—Grave decision—Assault of alligator—Superstitious modes—Feasts—Mukah massacre—Ruins—Braiun—Amicable encounter—Soliloquy—A peace concluded—Sarikei Fort—Fever and ague—Dyak social economy—Female sinners—Murders at Kaluka—Visit of young ladies—An insects' nest—Preparation for inland attack—Kajulan expedition—Conference—Unlucky accident—Stoppage of communication—Journal of incidents—Rapids—Dilatoriness—Council of war—Dyak devils—An unpleasant friend—Our march—Old jungles—Bivouack—Native kindliness—Continued old jungles—Retreat of enemy—Vacated houses—Burning of houses—Plunder—Dangerous incident—Devastation completed—Homeward march—An alarm—Unpleasant spectacle—Sadji's vaunt—Return home—Dyak conversion to Islamism—Arrival of Chinese gold workers—Caves—Accident—Orang Kaya's grief—Dyak observations.

October, 1854.—I was now appointed to the command of the whole Batang Lupar district, the headquarters of which were at the Sakarang Fort, lately occupied by Mr. Brereton. On taking charge I felt a deep melancholy for some days, while living among, and viewing, the many relics of my departed friend.

The natives were much attached to him, and felt his death with no ordinary degree of grief—more particularly those who were immediately around the fort. To a few chiefs he left all his effects; a mark of affection which has served as a lasting memento in the mind of the people. The land about the fort was not sufficiently drained or cleared for European constitutions, and I believe this had much to do with his many ailments—the country round being without roads. The only mode of taking exercise was to wade knee deep in mire. Though the place did not appear unhealthy, fevers and ague were more prevalent here than at Lingga, the sea-water not reaching so far as Sakarang at flood tide. After my arrival I threw my doors open to the public, more particularly to the Dyaks, and from morning to night my apartments were crowded with men, women, and children, with whom I soon became personally acquainted. By this means I daily gained new stores of their language. My arrival at Sakarang had the effect of bringing the Lingga and Sakarang Dyaks together; but there was anything but love existing between them, and when apart, they abused each other most spitefully.

My first Dyak case in the country was brought by a band, who complained of having had the whole of their goods seized from their rooms while they were

absent at their farms; and on making inquiry, I found this abstraction had taken place because a pig had been stolen by the complainants' father forty years before. The palaver among themselves took place in a Chinese house, and the arguments for and against lasted five days, the discussion being frequently carried on till day-break. The case, still not being settled, was brought to me for final arrangement.

I always found the plan most likely to answer was to permit the Dyaks to settle their disputes themselves, if possible, and upon their failing to do so, to bring them into my court, on the understanding that no word should be spoken after judgment had been passed by me. It may appear summary and despotic, but is very effectual, and in a country which contains so many varied customs, the administering of justice must necessarily differ entirely from the mode which prevails in a civilised community. We held a long conference with reference to half-and-half friends and enemies on the Sakarang waters who had not assisted us in making the attack on Sungie Lang, and who, moreover, had prepared to act against us, if the expedition had not been attended by success. Each country was noted with the chief's name and number of followers, and an adequate fine, according to Dyak custom, was arranged to be paid as a token of *hati*

baïk (good heart). There were in all thirty different villages from which fines of different amounts were to be demanded, and in the event of a refusal to pay, they would be declared enemies, and not allowed to trade in salt, &c. The Malay force did not dare proceed up the river without being largely reinforced from other countries, and for some time I was deliberating in what manner I could despatch the necessary information and demands to the chiefs of these villages.

One Dyak, who was a proved friend, came to me to receive instructions, and I fully expected it would have taken three or four days before he could learn all the particulars by heart, as they have no means of distinguishing marks or letters. I commenced the lesson, with my imperfect knowledge of the Dyak language, and was surprised how wonderfully acute his mind was, and how strong his memory. He brought a few dry leaves, which he tore into pieces; these I exchanged for paper, which served better. He arranged each piece separately on a table, and used his fingers in counting as well, until he reached ten, when he lifted his foot on the table, and took each toe to accord with each bit of paper answering to the name of a village, name of chief, number of followers, and amount of fine; after having finished with his toes he returned to his fingers again, and

when my list was completed, I counted forty-five bits of paper arranged on the table; he then asked me to repeat them once more, which I did, when he went over the pieces, his fingers, and toes as before. "Now," he said, "this is our kind of letter; you white men read differently to us." Late in the evening he repeated them all correctly, placing his finger on each paper, and then said, "Now, if I recollect them to-morrow morning it will be all right, so leave these papers on the table;" after which he mixed them all in a heap. The first thing in the morning he and I were at the table, and he proceeded to arrange the papers as on the evening before, and repeated the particulars with complete accuracy; and for nearly a month after, in going round the villages, far in the interior, he never forgot the different amounts, &c.

This was an original character named "Sandom," whose brother had been murdered by "Rentap," under circumstances which appear in Mr. Spencer St. John's book. I presented Sandom with a rupee, when he asked me the use of it, and whether it would purchase padi. A very few years later he was an active trader, and gained considerable riches; but at this time he was a determined molester of the enemy, and, in his foraging excursions, would go with only one follower in a small boat light enough to carry on

their shoulders. The weight of it together with all the articles they took with them, could not have exceeded a few pounds. Proceeding by night and hiding all day, they would enter an enemy's country, and wait within a few yards of their houses, or sometimes underneath, listening to all that passed, and gaining information of what they were doing. This was Sandom's special delight and occupation; but he very seldom came to blows with any of them. He loved the roaming over the mountains and valleys which he had been in the habit of looking upon as his own country, and with every part of which he was well acquainted. Had he been caught by the enemies, he would most undoubtedly have shared the same fate as his brother, who was dragged down a hill, and then had his heart torn out by Rentap. On one occasion Sandom with one follower proceeded to a distant river, about 150 miles off by land, passing through many enemies' countries, and more than once he spoke to them at night, leaving them in the dark as to who he was. He obtained three jars of considerable value from the back part of a long Dyak house, and brought these heavy articles all the way home, with a numerous enemy on his track. He was exceedingly thin when he arrived, and much scratched and wounded by his jungle travelling. He brought

me one jar, of the value of 12*l.*, saying, "that one is your division, the remainder I keep for myself." It is a custom that a portion of all plunder should be paid to the Government, so I kept this, and in the succeeding year, while a dangerous dispute was being carried on between Sandom and another powerful chief, the jar came in very opportunely for settling the matter amicably between them.

There had been as many as five alarms in one month. The enemy was said to be out in search of our people's heads, and on such occasions the sounds of gongs reverberated from one house to another, until the whole country was in a commotion, and men rushed to their boats with their arms, and pulled in the direction of the first sounds of the gongs. However, in most cases, after an ineffectual search for a day or so, they all quietly returned home.

Our Dyaks were eternally requesting to be allowed to go for heads, and their urgent entreaties often bore resemblance to children crying after sugar-plums. My head Malay chief—a most trusty man, Abang Aing—had generally to bear the brunt of these incomers, and for more than a year they were a continual pest. Often parties of four and five would get away to the countries of Bugau and Kantu in the vicinity of the Kapuas river, whose inhabitants are not

so warlike as the Sakarang and Saribus Dyaks. As soon as ever one of these parties started, or even listened to birds of omen preparatory to moving, a party was immediately despatched by Government to endeavour to cut them off, and to fine them heavily on their return, or, in the event of their bringing heads, to demand the delivering up of them, and the payment of a fine into the bargain. This was the steady and unflinching work of years, but before many months were over my stock of heads became numerous, and the fines considerable. Some refused to pay, or follow the directions of Government; these were declared enemies, and had their houses burnt down forthwith, and the people who followed me to do the work, would be Dyaks of some other branch tribe in the same river. I found the support of the Lingga Dyaks came in useful in carrying out these stringent regulations: many of my own friends and earliest neighbours had to undergo the punishment and suffer shame, but they seldom resisted.

Their acknowleged enemy was on Sadok, and when they asked for heads they were directed to seek for them there; but Sadok was a high and very precipitous mountain, and its inhabitants were brave, besides being connections of theirs. Consequently the more innocent and weaker Dyak tribes suffered, and

had suffered for years previously. My great endeavour was to put a stop to all promiscuous head hunting, and Abang Aing was invaluable in giving me his support. For hour after hour he would sit, and in a soothing voice and manner, urge the chiefs to restrain their people from making such incursions into other countries. When his arguments were to no purpose, his final remark would be, "Well, you know I have warned you, and if you attempt anything of the sort, we have arms, powder, and shot; therefore do as you think proper." After the first six months many gave up the thoughts of making these excursions, and the work gradually lightened until the year 1857, when the Dyaks broke out worse than ever.

My feeling was from the first an intense interest in the people, and I could not very severely blame them for head-hunting. It was an old established custom of their forefathers, and they considered it their duty to maintain it. Nevertheless my business was to prevent it to the utmost, and the only way of doing this effectually was by a strong hand and steady perseverance. An olive branch held in one hand, and a broomstick in the other, was the method of rhyme and reason with such simple-minded beings. Besides, if these head-hunting parties had not been prohibited, they would have much increased, and our Dyaks,

having protection from the Government fort and arms, would have been able to obtain heads with impunity, without any fear of retaliation. I led a party to burn down one of the principal Orang Kaya's houses, for disobeying Government orders in advancing in search of heads after he had been forbidden: this step made Abang Aing and many Malays feel great anxiety, but I took it as simply a matter of duty and justice to strike at the chiefs with greater severity than the lower class men. The culprit had been made an Orang Kaya by Mr. Brereton two years previously, before a large audience in open court. I had reason to believe subsequently, that my stroke of policy in upsetting him had a great effect on the minds of the population, although it necessitated extra watchfulness for some months. The Dyaks followed me by hundreds, and after the flames of the house were glaring high above the old jungle trees, we retired in time to stop the advance of a large straggling force which was coming to assist us. In returning, some spears were thrown at my boat, but they fell astern and did no harm.

An attack, only a few miles above the fort, took place between one village and another, in which one Dyak was shot. It happened thus: the upper party had planted Sirih creepers around their house, and had placed sharp bamboos near them for the purpose of

wounding the feet of any enemies or thieves. A few men living lower down, while passing, plucked some of the leaves, at the same time spiking themselves very severely. In consequence of the pain, they drew their swords, hacked the wood of the house, and injured the plants. The day after, the higher party came down and retaliated, by hacking at the lower party's boats at the landing-place. The morning after, Si Jannah, the chief of those down the river, collected his followers, armed, and made a deliberate attack on the upper party's house, notwithstanding that they were near relations; he shot the chief himself, and besides this death many of both parties were wounded. The report soon reached the Fort, and on hearing it I despatched Aing, accompanied by a large force, with orders to inflict a fine of twelve rusa jars—nearly 200*l.* The inhabitants of the house fled to the jungle in the first instance, but after becoming hungry they returned and were humble; the fine was paid immediately. The principal people who were to demand it, besides Aing, were other Dyak chiefs—one of whom, when he afterwards met me, said, "I never heard of such a severe fine being imposed, and I never yet saw a fine so quickly paid down; that is the quick way I like to see things done." This amount of fine became proverbial, and a great assistance to Aing in his coaxings

and reasonings. When one contemplated a quarrel or threatened to fight, it was, "Remember Jannah's twelve jars, the fine for killing; and if you cannot pay, your life will have to answer." It was a great increase in the price of flesh and blood; as heretofore 8*l.* had been the forfeit for committing murder, "or change of life," as they termed it. For years after this, Jannah was one of my best friends, and always most obliging in assisting in any work, for which he used to come and ask. The three subsequent years, he told me, his farms had yielded better harvests than he ever remembered; and this he accounted for by his being a friend of the white man.

A portion of these fines was always distributed to the remainder of the chiefs, both Dyak and Malay. This proved to them that they were not imposed for the sake of gain, or to satisfy any of that avariciousness on the part of Government which was so common under the Malayan rule. And likewise the distribution soon brought about a strong party who were on the *qui vive* to report any who went head-hunting, or acted contrary to regulations.

A case occurred at Banting which created much scandal among the higher circles of the Dyak community. The eldest daughter of one of the chiefs of a long house was found to be in a state of preg-

nancy, and according to the custom, this incident is not allowed to pass without considerable ado in bringing the father to acknowledge the paternity. The young lady claimed a man of rank, but the young chief disowned any share in the business, and was ready to stand as a witness that a slave was the father of the coming child. This dispute occasioned many days' litigation, and in the long run the lady had to prove her accusation by diving against the man of rank. If the latter won he would thus prove that he was innocent, and the slave in fault. The dive came off amid hundreds of spectators, but the woman lost her claim on the young chief, who was generally considered to be innocent of the matter. The chiefs in council afterwards gave their opinions gravely:—"That the Almighty had decided the case with an omniscient power, and brought the proper father to light to answer for his sins." The scandal and disgrace caused the lady to flee inland to a distance, and the old chief lost all his followers, who separated from him to seek another and more respectable leader, the sins of the child in these cases being visited upon the father. I saw the old man shortly after it happened, and a greater picture of misery I never cast eyes on. I pitied him from my heart. Deserted by all, he left the country for a neighbouring river.

When pulling in his small sampan a large alligator seized him, taking into his mouth the paddle at the same time; a fearful wound was made in his side, but with the long paddle he was able to prise the beast's jaws open; the boat swamped, and the old fellow managed to crawl up the banks, where he lay in a state of insensibility until a passer-by picked him up.

At certain seasons of the moon, just before and after the full, the Dyaks do not work at their farms; and what with bad omens, sounds, signs, adverse dreams, and deaths, two-thirds of their time is not spent in farm labour. When they have a plentiful harvest, the greater part of the stock is used for giving different kinds of feasts. This is, of course, a dead waste; and for the remainder of the year the inhabitants are badly off. The principal feast is for the head,—other minor ones take place, after the birth of children, the building of a new house, the death of a near relation, and the giving of food to all the feathered tribe, and perhaps some others of which I have not heard. Many a time have strange visitors remarked what happy people the Dyaks must be, who farm and gain a livelihood with so little trouble, and are not pestered by irritating social conventionalities. But this is not true by any means.

August, 1855.—I was surprised one day, while

living in my very quiet bungalow, to see a small schooner make her appearance at the mouth of the river, and by her I received instructions to proceed to Mukah, for the purpose of strengthening the Rajah's force, when he called there on his way from Brunei. Mukah was in a sad state of anarchy and confusion. Disturbances were of weekly occurrence. With a strong fair breeze we arrived there in two days, and were received with all honours, and a salute. This place is under the government of Brunei, which is equivalent to no government, or even worse than none at all. Their aim was aggrandizement, and their means simple rascality. A tragedy had lately been committed in this place, and as Mukah has much to do with my future operations, I will relate how it occurred. The acknowledged head man of the place was Pangeran Arsat, who was Brunei to the back-bone, and supported all demands of officials coming from his Highness the Sultan's dominion. He levied taxes and inflicted other oppressive measures upon the Mukah people, who were a hard-working set, but far behind the Dyaks in intelligence and advancement. Besides this Brunei Pangeran, there was one named Pangeran Mathusein, who had been brought up among the Mukah people, his mother being one of the Bumi or working class, and his relations were very numerous.

A feud had long been existing between these two Pangerans, both of whose houses were partially fortified, though heretofore they had never come to an open rupture.

Mathusein was an honest man, and did not countenance the exorbitant demands made on the population, but supported the latter against such injustice. On one occasion as Pangeran Mathusein was returning from the mouth, while going by Pangeran Arsat's house, some of the latter's relations and followers were brandishing arms and spears, and in other ways mocking Mathusein. He was impetuous and hot-headed, and he said, "I felt my head in a blaze." He forthwith rushed up to the house, cutting down Pangeran Arsat, wounding one other man, and in the promiscuous onslaught killed one of Arsat's daughters, and wounded another. He then returned, no one daring to oppose him, as he was noted for his strength, and was acknowledged to be the best swordsman by far in the whole country. On reaching his house he strengthened his fortifications, and prepared for an attack. In the course of a month a large force had assembled in Mukah to avenge the death of Pangeran Arsat. The leader of it was Seriff Messahore, who had called out the Dyaks of Kanowit and Saribus. They numbered more than a thousand, exclusive of Malays.

They remained before Pangeran Mathusein's fortifications for many days, during which time the party were playing sad havoc with the property of the inhabitants, who gave whatever was asked, and allowed their fruit-trees to be cut down without a word. The opposing forces frequently entered into conversation from the walls of their fortifications, and one day a promise was made by the Seriff Messahore that, if Mathusein would open his portals and come out, he and all his followers should go unmolested, be treated as friends and relations, and they would live together amicably. This was promised with the most binding oaths. Mathusein demurred for some time, but finally yielded to the entreaties of his own followers, and allowed the gates to be opened, and the people, men, women and children, to march out and surrender themselves. He was to leave the house on the following morning. In the course of the night, one daring fellow from Seriff Messahore's party made his way secretly into the presence of Mathusein, and urged him to fly immediately, as the next morning it would be too late, everything being prepared for his execution. The Pangeran buckled on his sword, and with six followers set off under the cloak of darkness, and made his way up into the Kayan country, whence he proceeded to Saráwak, and there found safety.

The unfortunate captives, who expected an immediate release, were bound hand and foot, put on board some large boats, and on a grass plot near the mouth of Mukah river were most inhumanly butchered in cold blood. The whole were in number forty-five, and were mostly women; their heads were given to the Dyaks, who at that time were our enemies. A short time after this tragedy I entered Mukah, and the scene where the murders took place was then fresh with the marks of the slaughtered wretches. Their torn clothes, the traces of blood and tracks of feet, were plainly visible on the ground. In pulling up through the Mukah village, most of the houses were burnt down, and the graveyards pillaged by Dyaks. The cocoanuts too were heartless and dying. The poorer of the working inhabitants suffered most. First of all they lost their favourite leader and relation, Pangeran Mathusein; then they lost their property; and now I could judge by their tone, that it was their express desire that a white man should hold the government of the place, as they ceased to trust in the faith of Brunei chiefs, who were continually bringing fire, sword, and desolation upon their town. On the fifth day after our arrival we heard the vessel containing the Rajah had passed on for Saráwak, so we set sail again, and were five days on our passage home. The weather

was exceedingly unsettled. I never remember witnessing more awful-looking black clouds at night; their appearance was far worse than the actual danger, as the wind was not particularly strong, nor did the rain last long, but the arches of cloud seemed solid enough to be massive rocks, grand and appalling. The watching did me a great deal of good, and together with my one companion I enjoyed the trip, the rocking and sea air having filled us with vigour. My time was then spent in Sakarang, in studying the language and habits of the people, as well as paying strict attention to the prevention of head hunting.

I found myself gaining ground among the natives as we became better acquainted, and every little improvement afforded me an inexpressible pleasure. I had been employed building a farm-house on a hill about two miles off, which would serve as a sort of sanitarium, although it was only 400 feet in height. The view from it was beautiful, the sides precipitous, and as yet a mere speck in the old jungle.

My little cot on Braiun was soon completed, and it afforded me many a wild and happy day, as I roamed about those rugged steeps with my dogs, without which I never dared to sleep at night, the place being on the high road to the enemy's country. Small parties might at any time have crept about in the vicinity.

Two little boys were my only friends, as I could not persuade my regular followers to accompany me, their unromantic spirits refusing to endure such a desolate spot. We all slept on mats in one room, while the dogs kept watch outside. Shortly afterwards the Dyaks farmed around, and in one season cleared the hill of every tree. When burning, the flames approached within a few yards of my domicile, and the farmers trembled while thinking of how many jars I should demand, if the house were burnt down. The Undup Dyaks, whom I trusted far more than any others, were always about me here, as their houses were close at hand. One party in the course of conversation told me that while they were working gutta percha last month, far in the jungles, they met another party of Dyaks. As each was facing the other, with spears in hand and swords half drawn, one hailed, "Who are you?" The reply was, "Undups." The others then said, "What Undups?" and on receiving the reply, "Tuan Undups," they said, "We are also Undups of the white man;" after which they joined their forces and proceeded together on friendly terms. They had been enemies previous to this unexpected meeting, and it is a wonder that heads were not the fruit of their campaign, instead of beeswax and gutta percha.

At this time the population are suffering from the

effects of a bad harvest, but good comes of it in some respects, inasmuch as it induces the people to work the other products of the jungle, and the commodities fetch a good price among the traders. This exchange gradually expands the minds of the aborigines, and leads them to seek for a livelihood in more directions than one.

December, 1855.—A Dyak has no conception of the use of a circulating medium. He may be seen wandering in the Bazaar with a ball of beeswax in his hand for days together, because he can't find anybody willing to take it for the exact article he requires. This article may be not more than a tenth the value of the beeswax, but he would not sell it for money, and then buy what he wants. From the first, he had the particular article in his mind's eye, and worked for the identical ball of beeswax with which and nothing else to purchase it. The natives, both Malay and Dyak, have a method of seeking internal satisfaction (I cannot explain it by other words in my limited vocabulary) by communing in private with the spirits of the woods; the Dyaks call it Nampok, and the Malays, Bertapar. They stay away many days, feeding on little or nothing, and if they see any living person during the time, they come home, and afterwards start afresh. Doubtless it does them good, soothing their simple minds.

A troublesome Malay, named Abang Talahar, I

found, had sent a spear among the Sakarang Dyaks, as a sign for them to arm and follow him on an expedition. This news reached me just in time to put a stop to what might have given much trouble; as it was, some boats had started, and others were arming. Immediate directions were sent round to stop them under the heaviest penalty, and I started myself after those who had gone on, and overtook them at the mouth of the river (seventy miles off). The head man slunk quietly into the background. I called for the "*calling out*" spear, and my crew searched the boat before they got it. I ordered them back, and gave them to understand, that the first who left without my permission, would be speared with this identical weapon. This was quite within their comprehension, and they returned home. A short while afterwards I summoned the Malay to appear before the Rajah, to answer for his delinquencies; and the steady way in which he denied having sent the spear, or even knowing anything at all about it, quite astounded me. This man was the coolest liar I had hitherto met. Turning white into black was a trifle compared with it. I felt my case was lost, as I had no witnesses in Saráwak, although there were numbers in Sakarang; his name subsequently appears, in connection with even more barefaced deeds.

January, 1856.—A peace was concluded between our Dyaks and those of a tribe named Bugau, who inhabit a branch stream of the Kapuas river. The Bugaus came in of their own accord, and were anxious to trade on this side, which is nearest them. This is one more hole stopped for head hunting excursions, and forms another handful of friends. They talk much the same language as the Sea Dyaks, and show a similarity in manners and customs. Early this year, a force started from Saráwak to erect a fort at Sarikei, twenty-five miles from the mouth of the Rejany. The Seriff Messahore had left this place, in consequence of having been fined for calling out the Dyaks for warlike purposes at Mukah, contrary to the regulations of Government. On arriving at the village, we found half of it in ashes, having been burnt down by the Dyaks. It was a pretty spot, on undulating ground, surrounded by fruit-trees. The building of the fort was a matter of only a few days. A party was sent up the river to communicate with the Dyaks; but finding the latter very numerous and hostile they came back as soon as possible, and were glad to escape without casualties.

At this time I was far from well, between fever, and ague regularly every afternoon at twenty minutes past two, and sunburns, which had stripped all the

skin from off my face, and blistered my arms; my teeth also were gum-boiled, and in this state I was glad to return to Saráwak to obtain medical advice. I noted while away, in conversations on the subject of Dyak warfare with those who had been many years among them, and were considered authorities, that the centre of the enemy was mentioned as being in a river named Kajulau, a tributary of the Kanowit. This country was said to be unapproachable, in consequence of its great distance inland; and on account of the almost universal hostility of the surrounding inhabitants. It was from this river that the head hunting excursions were usually made, and the outlets were numerous, in several directions towards the main streams, and thence to the Malay villages, and down upon the peaceable inhabitants of the coast.

In all directions around Sarikei and Kanowit there were enemies. Some few came to trade, but refused to pay revenue or obey the orders of the officials. They loved independence, and the two branches of Dyak employment were simply heads and salt; and as these two requirements could not be found in the same quarter they, in former times, usually made peace with one petty Malay chief for the purpose of obtaining salt, while the heads were brought from some

other petty Malay chief's village lying in another direction. By these means the Malays obtained a trade with Dyaks as well as a following.

On my return to Lingga, the sad news of four Kaluka Malays having been cut off by Kajulau Dyaks reached me. One of the murdered men was well known, and had been the most trustworthy man in the Kaluka river. The enemy's boat drew alongside the Malays, as they said, to trade; but after surrounding the unfortunates, they exclaimed, "Oh! you are our enemies;" then forthwith decapitated them. On hearing this report, I felt these bloodthirsty creatures would never be brought into subjection without the severest measures. They are the most subtle enemies, and there is no cure but burning them out of house and home—dreadful as this may appear. The women too must suffer, for they are the principal inciters and instigators of these bloody exploits. An attack upon a Dyak force, the destruction of the whole of it, with the lives of all the men, is no permanent advancement towards cessation of headtaking. But the burning down of a village, loss of goods, old relics,—such as heads, arms, and jars,—and putting the inhabitants, male and female, to excessive inconvenience—all this fills them with fear, and makes them think of the consequences of taking the heads of

strangers. These inland abodes have been and are everlasting fastnesses in their imagination. Besides, they always express very freely their notions of white men—"They are powerful, having arms, and ships at sea; but it is only we Dyaks who can walk and fight by land, and clamber steep mountains." The Lingga Dyaks expressed a strong desire to be allowed to go and make attacks on any Dyaks in this vicinity; but I prohibited their moving, as I was well aware an indiscriminate onslaught would only be made, in which the most innocent would suffer. Again patience was the order of the day.

March, 1856.—Three little Dyak girls came to pay me a visit, in all the pertness and prettiness of English misses; their behaviour was particularly pleasing. Having each shaken my hand, they took a chair, and then all sat upon it together. One, more forward than the other two, said they had come all the way from Banting to see me, had pulled in a boat themselves, and were going back the next tide. I then asked her after all the old women, especially their own relations, at Banting. The weather set in rough and rainy, and I asked them to remain. My invitation did not require renewing, for I found they soon made themselves perfectly comfortable on some mats in a corner. They were not long before they had picked

all my flowers, wound up my musical box, and were chattering away by themselves quite at home. They remained the whole of the next day and night, and did not bid me adieu till late the morning after. It amused me greatly, listening to this, the trivial confab which passes between all children, relating to every little occurrence of their daily life. These were three chums, or inseparable friends, nearly related, and were together from day to day. A part of my meals was handed to them, and they gave me no trouble. There is a strict etiquette among the Dyaks, more particularly among the females; the inmates of two houses, within twenty yards of one another, may be strangers, and never go into one another's houses; meeting or passing, they merely make the casual observations of distant acquaintances. The Dyaks are particular in this respect, and any person infringing the customary modes, would be treated as a fool or an idiot.

During the last three days I have been watching an insect, betwixt a dragon-fly and hornet, building her nest above my sofa on the rafter. It now is finished, and consists of two small cells, about an inch in length, the inner one having no opening to the outside, the doorway being closed. It took the insect exactly one day in arranging and completing each cell, bringing up mud from the river bank, and placing it

first of all in a lump, then thinning and smoothing it off with its pair of pointed instruments below the head. I was surprised at the activity of its movements, bringing up and paring off at least three loads of mud in a minute, and finishing the whole of one cell before any part of the mud had time to get dry. After the arranging of the mud on the outside, it went in to see if all was in proper trim; then, when it became dry, the intelligent insect returned, and was employed for some hours in smoothing both the outer and inner side. The natives call it Indu Angkat, and I always imagined it laid eggs in the different cells, which in the course of time became hatched; but the morning after I had seen the cell built, I found it bring, hugged in its grasp, something like a large spider, or more like a tick which sucks the blood of cattle; this was carefully deposited inside the cell, and after this a grub was placed inside also, and the opening plastered up; the next cell also received similar inmates, and was again closed. I conjectured the maggots to be the food of the insects when they are hatched from the eggs, which I supposed had been deposited, or the tick might be the young one itself in the primary state. The same insect then commenced a third cell, without resting, and I steadily watched him complete it, and deposit the living stock, and seal the portal.

The morning after, I found my servant had swept the whole beautiful fabric of my pet's nest away. He had no soul for the wonderful instinct of animals, and considered it in too near a proximity to his master's head.*

April, 1856.—We were almost daily having alarms in one place or another; sometimes on water, and at others on land. And upon one side of the whole length of the river, the inhabitants dare not farm or live, fearing attacks from the interior of Sakarang and Saribus. Small parties made their foraging excursions, and ran away with a head here and there, and were far distant before we could follow them up. Often, too, these alarms were false, raised by a breath, and ending in smoke. The chief difficulty on many occasions was to distinguish friends from enemies. Now again we prepared a force to make that grand attack on the Kajulau country, which I had been so long revolving in my mind. I felt it to be a matter of considerable danger, and very quietly investigated all the minutiæ before allowing a breath of it to get abroad.

* Many years after, the author, on reading the interesting account of "Naturalists on the Amazon," by Bates, saw a description of this insect, named Pelopæus wasp; the only difference appeared to be, that the Amazonian required a week to perfect her cell, while the Borneon wasp took only a day, or even less, the probability being that the mud in the latter instance was close at hand.

I received permission from Saráwak to organise an expedition for the attack; and this was to be the first force to act independent of Saráwak assistance in Malays and white men. The arms and ammunition were sent to be distributed among the natives who undertook the affair.

When it became a certainty, I called all the native Malay chiefs to set the plan before them, and to find out their opinion on the matter. I plainly told them that a successful attack would be for their own benefit, and future comfort and prosperity; for as it was, if we remained as quiet as we had been, the Dyaks would surely gain ground upon us, and increase their annoying and marauding incursions. I did not mention that I had any intention of accompanying the force, nor had I then obtained permission to do so.

Some of the head men gave their opinion freely and sensibly, saying there was considerable risk, as the distance was great, and there was danger of sickness, and the wounded men would be cut off by the numbers of enemies they were sure to find waiting in every direction. But they said, if the Government wished them to go, and would assist them, they were willing to do their best. Most inopportunely for a superstitiously ignorant set of beings, just as these orations were ending, and a crowd of some 300 armed men

were standing and sitting in front of me, about thirty feet of the flooring of this old fort gave way, and down went the greater part of the assembly simultaneously, with boxes of powder, chairs, and numerous other articles. The fall was about ten feet; so that some of them were severely bruised, and several of their swords, which were attached to their waists, were snapped in two. The effect was laughable; but I trembled while thinking that such an overset would be attributed to adverse or bad omens. However, they made a joke of it, and went home, after they had received a high price for their weapons and balm for their wounds, and it was mentioned no more. I instantly placed a strong guard in every direction around and above us, to cut off all possibility of communication with any of the enemy. The Dyaks prepared their boats; and notice was given to a few only of the Malay community that they were required for active service, being armed and provisioned for so many days.

We could muster about one hundred muskets, as well as a few rifles. We were busy making cartridges, two thousand of which I made with my own hands in a few days, working night and day. But my health was far from satisfactory—pains and aches were in all my bones; and I felt so weak as hardly to be

able to rise from a bed. People said it was being hipped.

June 6th, 1856.—The force was assembled around the village of Sakarang, numbering about one hundred largish boats; containing on an average thirty men in each. My boat was a narrow skim-along of 54 ft., with about 3 ft. beam, containing a crew of twenty-two men, all picked, and mostly old and tried followers. My friend "Aing" was in a boat about the same size, but my craft was supposed to be the fastest.

9th.—We were waiting for "Ballan" or Lingga Dyaks, whom we held most provoking and perverse for not attending at the time appointed. The listening to birds is deferred till the last moment, so that a bad or unlucky one causes a considerable delay. We passed along the coast, waiting at each place for our party, and keeping the force as much as possible from the view of people bound to and fro for trading purposes.

10th.—While waiting in a small stream, we were obliged to stop a trading boat of Dyaks bound for Saribus river, as they would have spread the intelligence far and wide. This boat was placed in charge of two of our force to watch, and was then carried on with us. The poor fellows were in great fear and trembling.

11*th*.—Our force passed the mouth of Saribus river, which is broad and dangerous for such small boats as mine; and as we started before the tide was sufficiently slack, we got into a bubble of a sea, half filled, wetted everything, and had to go back, with the greatest difficulty keeping the boat afloat. Towards the afternoon we tried again, and this time we succeeded.

When I was on the point of leaving the line of communication with Saráwak, and thereby precluding a possibility of recall, I despatched letters to inform the authorities in Saráwak that I had accompanied the expedition, as I considered it was imperatively necessary for such a force to be under the direction of a white man, whose influence only would pacify any disputes arising from the counsels of the natives. We entered the Kaluka river, and with a flood tide pushed on until we reached a village. Darkness had set in, and my crew were dead tired, as I had made them pull past the whole force to gain the lead. We were hailed from the village, whose inmates were in total ignorance of such a force being near them. There was much trouble in keeping the other boats of Dyaks from passing on; but I was resolute, as success depended upon good management. One mistake in allowing a party to proceed to warn the enemy, and

we should never overcome the obstacles. When once we have reached their country, they may assemble to oppose us in what numbers they please.

12*th*.—We pushed on for Siputtan, and here the grand conference was to be held, and our final start for the enemy's country was to be made on the morrow. Some of the Malays came to see me, and were willing to follow; but the head man, Nakodah Brahim, entered my boat, looking exceedingly glum. I asked him if he intended to join us, at the same time telling him I would leave it entirely to himself to go or not, as he felt inclined. He replied,—"No, Tuan, I won't go, because I am perfectly sure the expedition will not be successful in attacking the Kajulau country, or even reaching anywhere near it. I have been bred up from my youth in this place, and I know the difficulties which intervene, both on water and land. Your Dyaks will be only able to kill some of the innocent people living near us, whose houses you will have to pass; and I would stake my existence that no good can come from such an undertaking." We parted, and he returned to his house; but before his leaving I put the trading boat's crew under his superintendence, with strict orders not to allow them to be released for three days. I subsequently heard one got away the day after, and no doubt spread

the news throughout the country as fast as possible. At four, the chiefs (Malays and Dyaks) were squatting in a circle, in the centre of which was placed a chock of wood for myself. I had carefully noticed all the points to be discussed. On leaving my boat I was so weak and stiff, that two men assisted me up the bank, aches being still in every bone. My oration proceeded thus:—"Abangs, chiefs, and all, we have assembled to discuss the future operations of our force; the plan of its proceedings will be settled after to day, when we shall be in the enemy's country, although not those whom we are bound to attack. On starting from this point we must strictly attend to regulations, as, in the management of these depends our future success or failure, glory or shame. I ask your assistance, each expressing his opinion openly and fearlessly; but after we break up no more is to be said. Acts come after words. In the commencement I will give you my opinion of how we should manage affairs, but as this is the first time I have accompanied such an inland expedition, and being the only white man, I beg you who are older, and have had more experience, to be as plain with me as I shall be with you. I appoint Lela Pelawan and Abang Aing to be the two heads and leaders of the whole force. I will be a witness, and do my best to assist in so great an under-

taking, upon which depends much of vital importance. In proceeding to-morrow morning the Balla will advance in order, and no boats are to attempt to pass mine, which shall lead, after the guides. Sandom is our guide, and we are to attend minutely to his directions. None of the force are to stray right or left, or molest any one living on intermediate ground. Our enemy is in Kajulau, and we must pay no attention to others, unless they make an attack on us. We assemble at Budu and thence commence our inland march, which will be placed under regulations in a second conference held at the starting-point. The chiefs of the boats are answerable for their people; in passing over rapids every care must be taken, and the first one over must assist those behind." This was all I had to say. After which there were only casual remarks upon different matters connected with the advance, and no one but the Dyak chiefs spoke at length, and then only to harangue their own followers. After all the severe part was over, the old chiefs related their dreams, which were lucky and auspicious, and the whole party seemed satisfied.

13*th*.—Before dawn opened I heard the low sound of many voices around my boat, and surmised that there was some hitch in our affairs. As soon as I opened my eyes Lela Pelawan and numerous others

stepped into my boat, and tried to dissuade me from attempting to advance; he said he had been kept awake all night by the Kaluka people, who knew the many obstacles of the river, and they all proposed the force returning, and attempting an advance up another branch. One Kaluka man said, "You may as well try to take boats over the roof of a house as go over those rapids." I felt very vexed, for more than half my Malay force was crying off.

At this juncture Aing came in, and for the first time spoke—he was the most silent and stolid individual on most occasions. He said, "Now, Kaluka men, you heard what passed last evening, and you refused to speak. You have lost more heads from these enemies than any others, so that you should be the first to assist in such an attack, instead of wishing to mislead us, where you know we can't touch or approach the Kajulau country." This was enough; I despatched the Kaluka party with a flea in their ears, and told them, if they were afraid, they had better return to their wives, as we should go on until we found dangers too difficult to cope with. Half-an-hour afterwards we were one stirring mass of boats and bodies—the Dyaks rushing on, and every now and then coming so close, as to endanger the safety of my boat. The Banting Dyaks were in immense boats,

carrying fifty and sixty men, and very fast. Two hours after we started, as I was standing up, blunderbuss in hand, I felt my health and strength quite restored, and all pains and aches left me. The excitement of such a wild sight caused a reaction and cured me thoroughly; it was the first. time I had witnessed such a force of wild devils trying to throw all order to the winds.

In passing round one of the points we spied a boat containing Dyaks, and fortunately our guide, Sandom, had already closed with it, and taken the crew under his protection. The other part of the force was perfectly mad, throwing off their covering, arranging their arms, and making the most fearful noise. These strange Dyaks belonged to a branch stream a short way above this. I warned them not to appear in our line of march with arms, or they would be treated as enemies, and ordered them to return to their house for the present: after this they followed in our wake, and we advanced again. The river soon narrowed, and rocks were strewed in many places; the big boats therefore drew astern to pass dangers quietly; the Sakarang light boats then followed close to me, and were less noisy than the Banting Dyaks. At mid-day we arrived at the Rapid Ambuas, and here we could only pass one by one. This rapid was not actually dan-

gerous, as the waters passed quietly over it, but it was a hard pull to get a boat over. The Sakarang boats soon overcame the difficulty while I sat on the rock watching them. It was a massive boulder about eight feet in height, with considerable steepness, but there was a small passage on the right bank through which the stream poured. The heavy boats were not yet up, and I was aware what their remarks would be, for this was the place they had represented as the great difficulty. When sitting here many of the Sakarang chiefs were around me, and old Linghi observed, "Tuan, our start has been very satisfactory and auspicious, the enemy are still in ignorance of our proceedings, and if Bertara assist us we shall meet with success." The old man then opened his bag containing his sirih and penang, which he had strung round his neck, and allowed a snake about five feet in length to escape, which I did not see until it was moving along and passing over one of my bare feet. I was much startled, and should have decamped in all haste if I had had time to do so, but the old man seized my arm and said, "Now that is really a first-rate omen; and don't be alarmed—look how gently it proceeds: no one must hurt it;" then he drove it along until it was fairly out of sight up the bank. This snake had crawled into his boat and been received into his sirih

bag, where it had been coiled quietly for more than an hour. My light boat went over the difficulty without a hindrance, and we cheered loudly as we reached the upper side. There we all waited for the heavy party in the rear. At length they arrived, bringing their boats' bows on to the boulder. Their faces immediately denoted their thoughts, and when I called the head Malay chief, Lela Pelawan, and told him the difficulty could be surmounted with the will, he demurred; and I heard a bowman say, "we might as well have poisoned ourselves before starting, as think of getting our boats over such naked rocks." The whole of the afternoon I sat on those rocks trying to persuade them to pull their boats over, and offered to assist them myself; but the spirit of opposition, fear, and irresolution gained the day. I was much disappointed; and wound up by telling them I should proceed without them next morning. These fellows went on conversing throughout the whole night, some proposing one scheme, some another, and they did not like my going without them, as, if anything serious happened to me, they were afraid of the consequences being visited on them from Saráwak. The evening set in beautiful and serene, scarcely a leaf was moving, and not a cloud appeared over head.

There were brought to my boat four Dyaks, who lived

in a house above, from the landing-place of which we should have to start on our inland march. These four men had been on their way down to trade, and much to their surprise came in contact with our force, and considered it the safer plan to join the multitude. They were only friends through fear, and would have killed any of us if they had found an opportunity. In true Dyak custom, when Dyak meets Dyak they begin detailing the collateral branches of their forefathers, and found out that most of them were connected through some circuitous paths of relationship. Old Orang Kaya Gassing (who is a remarkably bad speaker for a Dyak) spoke to them to the following effect: "Children and grand-children, you are living somewhat distant from us, and we scarcely know how your hearts are disposed; but remember we follow a Government, and are now bound to punish the enemies of order in the Kajulau country. We acknowledge only one roof-tree (parabong), the Rajah of Saráwak, under which we all find protection and justice, and in its shelter we stand as a support and assistance, —you must be either with or against us."

Dusk came on, and fires were lighted all around by the forces for cooking. It was a strict rule that no smoke should ascend during the day, or the enemy would find out the movements of so large a force by

the shadows cast before it. Smoke can be descried a hundred miles off, and the natives know if it be occasioned by farm-burning, house-burning, or cooking. My spare meal was over, and the cigar whiffed with extreme pleasure, for I felt our manœuvres were on a satisfactory footing; and this undertaking had been so many days wrapt up in my mind, that there was a gratification in contemplating its gradual execution. For nights and nights I had dreamt of nothing else, sometimes with successful results, at others as attended with the most direful calamities and cold-blooded cutting of throats; the reality will never surpass what the imagination has already pictured in exaggerated colours during sleep. A wild and glorious sight presented itself, and it was one which I shall never forget. The boats were thickly huddled on each bank. At the bows of each the crew had cooked their food, and were now sitting and talking over their fires; merry laughs were heard, as well as the monotonous mournful tones of the stream trickling over its stony bed. A bright moon was rising and pouring its light through the overhanging boughs of the large trees by the water's edge. We could hear, too, our rearmost party in the distance. Without covering, under that bright moon I sank into a sound sleep, very thankful for what we had accomplished, but with

a deep feeling of the responsibility of the charge I had brought upon myself, in which failure would be the death of hundreds or thousands. There would be no one to bury us above this point, and few, if any, could find their way home if we chanced to meet with a reverse. I was here without permission, but I knew success would justify such an act, and failure would leave me beyond the reach of any want of forgiveness.

14*th*.—Our party were busy cooking at 3 A.M. by the light of the moon, when some of the leaders of Sussangs and Linggas came to tell me they were determined to follow by land, and they would not permit me to advance without them; they tried to delay one day here, but that I declined, and after speaking quietly to them, the light division advanced in order. We found there were no insurmountable barriers beyond; but some of the rocks were exceedingly sharp and steep, of limestone formation, so that many boats received injuries, and it delayed us a short time to patch them up. We passed some small streams and untouched jungle, lovely to the eye and refreshing to the soul. At 2 P.M. we came to the mouth of the place (Budu) for leaving our boats, and it answered the exact description Sandom had so often given me, and was excellently adapted for a temporary fortification as a protection for our boats. Above this point

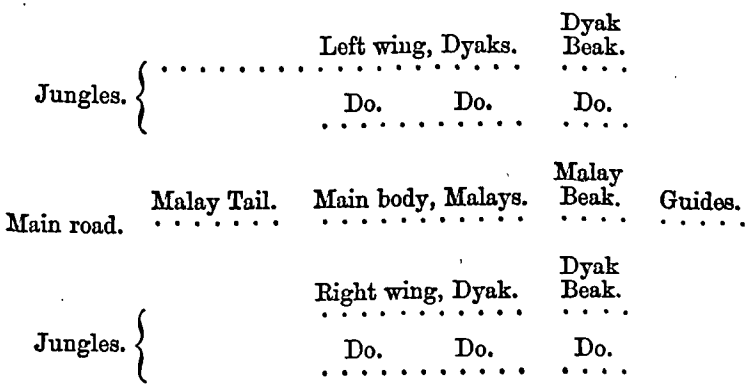
there are many houses of enemies; in fact, the whole country towards Saribus, on our right, was inhabited by people who were hostile to us; our course lay to the left, and the rear was to be guarded.

After resting an hour we commenced clearing and marking out the ground for a stockade, with a strong paling around. There were two long houses of Dyaks within a few hundred yards of us, and we could discern the fruit trees around them. I doubted the sincerity of the inhabitants, and heard to my disappointment that the leading Dyak of all the head-hunting parties in Saribus, named Sadji, was staying here for the purpose of fining some people. He was a nominal friend, as he had been received in Saráwak as such; but I knew him to be the most determined enemy we had in the whole country, and hereafter the news of our movements would spread like wild-fire. But now I did not care so much, as we had arrived at a point where retreat was impossible, and to fight was the only means of holding our own against any and every party who tried to impede our progress. We had a hundred muskets, and our following, about 3000 men. There was no more news of the rearmost party this day, but I got the Dyaks to work well at the fortifications, so that we might proceed directly they came up. They caused me much anxiety, as, if I

advanced without them, my force would be quite inadequate for the undertaking. I was informed by some old heroes with hoary locks, that no previous force had ever passed this mouth of Budu.

15*th*.—Our fortifications and "pagars" (palings) were finished at an early hour, and now we were anxiously waiting the arrival of the greater part of our force still in the rear, and there was no possible means of communicating with them. The second and last council of war was to be held this afternoon, the start to be made to-morrow morning. Early in the afternoon our hindermost party began coming in; they had mistaken their way, and had a very severe walk over steep hills. Our council again consisted of the principal men, and we proposed the following points: firstly, Pangeran, Matah, and Sau Besi (iron anchor) should be the beak (patok) of our force, and proceed close on the steps of the guides—Sandom and his party. In the Malay centre I should walk with Aing and the other chief men; and the tail (ikur) should be commanded by Seriff Amjah, a stolid old Kalacka noble: this line was to use the pathway and follow in the wake of the guides; besides which there would be wings consisting of Sakarang and Batang Lupar Dyaks on my right, a few yards off, while the Bantings and Undups would be on my left. The chief

of each wing or tribe was to appoint his own fighting cocks to lead, and occupy the centre himself abreast of me. This marching order would present five lines, thus—



It would be impossible for any one to break us, or separate our party. We were to advance, halt, and keep together as much as possible. They were warned not to rush into an enemy, as was done at Sungei Lang, where several were killed in consequence. That evening there was a variety of preparations to be made; the party who had to remain took charge of the stockade.

16*th*.—The arms were all set in order, and when morn came it was raining, damp, and hazy, which somewhat retarded us; but directly the skies began to lighten, about 8 A.M., we fell into order. The Dyaks set off, and Malays followed, and our turn

came; Dyaks were here and there with the tapping sound of sword and spear rattling against their shields; and now we fairly set off, and this is always a satisfaction. While marching on open farming ground, before the order was properly arranged, who should come straight up to me but Sadji and Tangok, the former a renowned enemy, and the latter the chief of the houses which were within a few yards of us. Sadji came and offered his hand, and after cocking my rifle, I shook it with my left, keeping my eye steadily on him all the time; the other man held out a fowl, this I refused: I told the leaders to march on, and we left them,—but mischief was working in his mind, as I well knew. His presence in my rear kept me in particular care of our tail, as I was aware he would have some hundreds at his heels within a couple of days. We reached the old jungle, when a halt was called, so that the guides might pick out the best path. Sandom had no trifling duty on his shoulders, and well he performed it throughout, although many times the discontented and fatigued ones complained and abused him in unmeasured terms. His curt reply was never more than "You ignorant fools." About 11 A.M. we formed in regular order, and marched without a break until 4 P.M. over hill and dale, continually wading through streams. The old jungles were cold, as no sun broke

through their impenetrable branches; the hills were of easy ascent, but slippery from the numbers of feet; a halt was called, and we set to work to build sleeping places ("lankans") by the side of a sparkling stream, "Tassi," winding so much as to allow all the Malay force, 300 men, to be close together. After I had rested a short time, and dusk was coming on, I received intelligence that many of the Lingga Dyaks had bivouacked far beyond all means of call in case of being attacked. This alarmed me so much that I determined to set off with only Aing, and bring them in. They were now a mile away, and when I reached their abodes, I ordered them all to join the force immediately; and finding they would not move, proceeded to cut away at their lankans, till down they all came. Aing asked me to desist, but one mistake would have left us all dead men, and reasoning is little use with such a perverse set as these. They did not approve of this summary treatment, but not one offered to resist, so they followed me back to the camp, houseless for the night in consequence of disobeying orders. It was pitch dark walking back, and we had many severe tumbles, but, though tired, I felt satisfied; so rolled myself up in the Sarawak flag and slept a little in the rain, for the roof was leaking like a sieve. The sound of the enemy's gongs and instruments for collecting

their forces, and warning the surrounding country of the approach of our force, were distinctly reverberating in many directions, but we were not bound to attack them this time.

17*th*.—Stiff and wet, I rose by daylight, when all our force cooked, and were now preparing for the start. The hot coffee was a delicious gift, as my appetite was gone. At 7 A.M. I rose to put on my belt, when Aing and all the rest got ready without a word. Now we were off again. The order was kept very regularly; and the cleared space in the old jungles we left behind was as if thousands of wild animals had been tearing through the underwood—the ground on the sides of the hills was literally scraped. The Dyak wings had considerable difficulty in keeping their stations, and often tried to mingle with the Malays, but were forcibly pushed out. We marched again for five hours, during which we had left some of the enemy's sounds behind. There was one house on a hill not far off on our right. Those warning sounds keep our Dyaks on guard, and the Linggas did not give any more trouble as on the previous night. My feelings were not cheerful, and I was sensible such work was depriving me of flesh and weight. My appetite was gone, and the cold and wet did not tend to cheer me; but I felt as strong as a horse. I may

here mention the extreme thoughtfulness and kindness of the Malays, both my own men and the others, who were not on pay. They did everything they could to add to my comfort, in a most unostentatious way; and I never had to ask or give an order twice over. People were glad to assist the solitary white man who had trusted his life under their protection and care; and I feel sure there were few among them who would not have placed his own life in danger to save mine.

We stopped this night at Nanga Kau, and found the remains of numerous old lankans, which were now rotting, but had been the resting-places of a large head-hunting force on their road towards Kaluka.

18*th.*—Started as usual, keeping in the same order, and having much more difficult walking, as the sides of the hills were higher and steeper, and the streams between them deeper. Some of the batangs (logs) were very slippery, and it was as much as I could do with shoes to keep on my feet, even with the assistance of the man in front, who gave me a helping hand more than once. Old untouched jungles without an opening were covering us, and I often heard a complaining Dyak say, as he was pushing his way through the under brushwood, "These Sakarangs are leading

us to the end of the skies, and I don't believe there are any mankind here." I must confess I was becoming tired and weary of such monotonous and chilly work, and was beginning to think our guides were at fault in the route, but all at once, at 3 P.M., a yell and a screech was heard from our leading party, accompanied by eight or ten shots, which awoke us all from our reveries. The yells were soon resounding along our whole line. We were now on the borders of the Kajulan farming ground, and the enemy had showered spears at our leaders as they were ascending a small eminence; but the muskets cleared the ground, and brought four down instantaneously; the remainder fled. On coming out from the old jungles, we could see several houses of the Kajulan inhabitants, and our force of Dyaks was proceeding double-quick time towards them. On arriving, we found the houses deserted by the people, but containing much plunder, which was being collected in all directions. Some few fellows had been wounded, who came to me to be spat on or medicined. This I declined to do; so my people gave them a volley of saliva over their wounds in my stead, and promised a speedy recovery. We halted at Lambur's house, which was large and new, and, as it so happened, was all prepared with decorations for a head feast, which evidently was to take place in a day or

two, or perhaps sooner. The inmates must have fled in great haste.

While waiting for a little quiet before disposing ourselves inside, I was talking to Lela Pelawan; and as he took a view around, he said, "Ah, this is the first time any of us have seen Kajulan; we never before ventured to make an attack as far as this, although I have been at war nearly all my life, and have attacked every place on and near the coast."

This country is undulating, and has not been inhabited long—the soil is extremely good for farming. The results of their harvests were to be seen in the great quantity of padi stocked in their houses, which were crammed, and yet they could not be contented without committing butcheries by which heads could be obtained. The Kajulan stream ran close by, about thirty yards broad, and shallow, with a pebbly bottom, much such a gentle river as is to be seen in England, without dangers or difficulties, peaceably wending its course through glades and shades. The bathing was delicious, and we rested under a good roof for the night.

19*th*.—Parties were despatched in different directions to burn and destroy; and right well can these Dyaks do such work. Malays are useless at anything of the sort; they sit quietly in the *dolce far*

niente style, imagining some favourable success and fortune may fall from the skies, if *Alaf 'Alah* should be disposed to assist them. Although the enemy ran off in haste, they had time to hide many things of value; but our Dyaks allowed no leaf to pass unturned; and at a place in the river where I had been sitting and bathing for hours to-day, along with hundreds of Malays, I was surprised to see, towards the evening, a few Dyaks come to take their last duck before retiring after their day's work; when lo! and behold, they traced a small line to a twig, and brought up a large brass gun. Such is their quickness of vision; only Dyaks can kill Dyaks.

There was smoke ascending in many directions, and a large stock of plunder coming on, during the whole day, but not a sound of an enemy; in fact, they must have been panic-stricken at our cool lodgment in the centre of their estates—paying them off for old scores, and receiving a balance. At mid-day, Sandom, while away with the Linggas, came across a party of the enemy and some swords were drawn, but Sandom rushed between, just in time to exclaim, "It is my father-in-law, don't kill him!" They fortunately obeyed him, and he was brought as a captive to me. He was a fine strapping fellow, of middle age; and the scratches about his bare body plainly proved that he

must have been one who opposed our advance yesterday, and ran for his life through brushwood. I asked the poor fellow (who gloried in the title of "The bear of heaven") in what direction his house was situated? Looking out, he said, "There. Ah! those are the flames of it just rising." I promised him his safe conduct, and that of his family, if he could find them. With the guidance and assistance of Sandom, they were rescued from their hiding-place—a mother and four children—and all returned with us.

I had been expecting an attack this afternoon, as I thought the enemy would have recovered, and organised themselves sufficiently to offer resistance; but no, there was not a breath of hostility, and I ate my dinner off a tough fighting-cock, scorched, feathers and all, over a fire, and some old and dried Indian corn, which is kept for medicinal purposes, particularly for the cure of snake bites; each man carries a small quantity in jungle travelling. My appetite was very meagre, and my whole organisation seemed tense with the strain of care and responsibility. I had certainly made a mistake in bringing no alcohol with me; two glasses of sherry would have made all the difference. Towards seven o'clock we observed that the posts of the house in which we were located were sloping considerably, and after the whole party of Malays had

been holding a serious discussion about the probability of the building falling before long, I began to think this would be no joke at any time, but more particularly now in an enemy's country, several days from boats, and about ten feet off the ground, so that if we did fall, we should lose both arms and lives. I found it had been caused by the Dyaks stowing much of their plunder away on the roof of the house,—heavy jars, gongs, and every kind of rubbish of Dyak householdry—besides, hundreds had betaken themselves above when, according to custom, they should have been on the ground. Abang Aing came, and most authoritatively obliged me to take up my arms and leave the house with him. I did as I was requested, and directed the Malays to turn the Dyaks out instantly; using fair means at first—that failing, to try stronger measures, as out they must come before our domicile falls. Aing and myself sat some distance off on a large log, answering the purpose of a bridge over a running stream. The moon was at the full, and rose in all its brilliancy, without a cloud or a breath of air. A thin white haze enveloped the lower land. The night was cool and delicious, and we were only waiting till the house was secure to return to our roost. The din of the many voices in the dwelling would have been audible several hundred yards off; but as

time drew on, Aing and myself listened attentively, and at last thought there was a quarrel arising among our people. As the din increased, louder voices could now be heard above the others, besides the rumbling sound and confusion being excessive; at length, some came in hot haste down the ladder, while others were scampering up; then I wished to ascertain the cause of this disturbance, but Aing would not let me move. Five minutes after, three Banting chiefs rushed down, and, almost breathless, they begged me to come up immediately—so away I went, with sword and loaded double-barrel. On entering the house, and shoving my way through a living mass, I found in the centre of it an opening of about six feet; upon either side of which were men with drawn swords, vociferating amazingly,—the Dyaks on one side, Malays on the other, and both in an equally exasperated state, but held back by some of the steadier folks on each side. There was no time for hesitation or argument, and I was well aware of the dangerous propensities of the Ballan Dyaks, when their tempers are once aroused. So I immediately placed myself between the two parties, ordered them to be silent, and cocking my double-barrel before the eyes of Apai Niawin, I proceeded to order him forthwith to leave the house, and with the muzzle of my double-barrel within two

inches of his head I followed him to the top of the ladder, and told him, if he uttered one word more he was a dead man. Not a syllable was spoken by anybody, and the Dyaks edged away, leaving me and the refractory Dyak to march along unheeded. After he left, I gave him permission to open his case the next morning, if he felt disposed. Quiet was restored, and no one spoke above a whisper during the remainder of the night. After this I heard no more of it, but it was very near being as disagreeable a catastrophe as could possibly have happened.

20*th.*—Parties were arranged to proceed further down the river, to attack and destroy all that came within their reach. We remained here quietly, and the only volume I had to amuse myself with, was a pocket edition of "Childe Harold." The parties came home late in the evening, and our work of destruction was complete. Twenty-five houses had been sacked and destroyed, some large, some small. The amount of property plundered was immense. The ashes of padi were in some places a foot deep, and continued to smoke and smoulder.

21*st.*—A council of war was again held this morning, and I was particular in arranging the order of the march home, as the Dyaks are so careless when thinking themselves safe; and now, many were

heavily laden, and thought much less of the enemy than of their plunder. The leaders in advancing, became the rearmost in returning. The "Iron Anchor" and the Pangeran have the most positive instructions to allow no one to lag after them, except Sandom and his party, who, according to Dyak warfare, plant sharpened bits of bamboo along the pathway, with the points directed towards the enemy. This may seem somewhat like child's play, but it is an effectual safeguard against the enemy following, and for cutting off stragglers.

There were some wounded and many sick that had to be carried—these were marched along in the centre, and at half-past seven we left the house and set fire to it. As we marched away, the twitter of a bird sounded a particularly good omen on our right. We take a last look around on what three days ago contained every article of Dyak luxury, in readiness for feasts after plentiful harvests of padi and heads, the latter brought from our friendly villages. Now, all are in ashes and cinders; a few hours more, and the females will return to weep and wail over the complete loss of all their cherished goods, their heirlooms handed down for generations. Fortunately no female lives had been taken, and no captives.

Again we entered the old jungle, passed the remains

of the unfortunates who tried to oppose our progress, and marched, with the exception of an hour at midday, until sunset, when we stopped at our first encampment. Some parts of the road had been excessively slippery, and the batangs were nearly impassable; however, my eyes and feet were in walking order, and I could go as well as any of them, carrying a rifle, a hundred rounds, pistol and sword; the latter I have found better slung over the shoulder than on the waist, as so much depends on the balance and free play of the body at the hips in walking over a batang.

22*nd*.—We set off earlier than usual this morning; our party was assisted by light hearts, and the thoughts of getting home again; at all events, this was the case with myself. We kept in good order, and marched faster than before. Many of the Dyaks had gone on before light, and would be at the boats at an early hour. We passed through the clear ground where I had shaken hands with Sadji, and in another hour had reached the boats, as fresh and comfortable as possible. A delicious bathe, and some wine and water, were the first things to have—then a lounge in the boat in thin clothing, with that exhilarating feeling of lightness which one experiences after a Turkish bath. During my enjoyment in the satisfaction that our trials were

well-nigh over, a rush was heard with tumultuous yells, and armed people were dashing back over the path by which we had come. I soon learnt that the "Iron Anchor" and Pangeran had been attacked in the rear, and within five minutes two Dyaks rushed to my boat with drawn swords, carrying a head yet gory and dripping, which they dashed down in front of me—they were violently disputing the ownership of this dreadful article. I knew each of them, and directed one to take it home, promising that the case should be properly settled on arriving at Sakarang. The yells and cheers were deafening, and it was some time before I could get the particulars of what had happened. After the noise had somewhat subsided, "Iron Anchor" and Pangeran came to me, and told me, as they were marching and bringing up the rear about three miles off, a party of Dyaks came down the side of a hill close to them. The Pangeran hailed, and asked them who they were; the answer was, "we are of one (Balla) force." Our party hailed again, and then fired; two of the strangers fell dead, the others took to flight. On Sandom following them up, he saw Sadji with a large party fully armed, for the purpose of making an onslaught on our rear. The Pangeran fortunately could recognise the Dyak tribes, and well knew their craft, and different costumes. Our party escaped

unhurt, and Sadji, who had, I subsequently was told, vaunted that he would get forty of our heads, and mine among the number, ran for his life, leaving two dead behind him. And this was the last we saw of the enemy upon this my first large expedition, returning from which I found myself in a very emaciated condition, and with a great difficulty in drawing breath for some months after. To what this was owing I could never find out.

23*rd*.—This morning we set off down the river in boats, but there were many most annoying hindrances. The Kaluka people were worse than children: in coming up they refused to bring their boats, and now declined walking down to them, trusting to others, all too crowded as they were. Hour after hour I was detained with these people, whom I could not leave to their fate. A few boats were smashed on their way down: one man climbed a tree to reconnoitre, off which he fell and was killed.

After gliding over the Ambuàs rapid we prepared the coverings of our boats in a more substantial manner, and then stopped the night. The next morning on passing Nakodah Brahim's village, he came to me, and looked somewhat surprised when he heard our news; he spoke as a straightforward fellow, but he is so crooked in his ways that no reliance can

be placed on him. An old Pangeran came also, and bespattered me with yellow rice as a thanksgiving after danger. We pulled the whole of that day, thinking little of adverse tides, as every one was anxious to get home. The "Jolly," with Mr. John Channon, was lying at the mouth, and had letters from the Rajah, to whom I sent a report of our successful expedition, which was read out in open court in Saráwak as a victory.

Our party was much cheered and welcomed on arriving at their homes. During our absence, several reports had been brought of our having been surrounded and all put to the sword. My first night on a bed was delicious, and it was mid-day before I opened my eyes, with a feeling of relief from all care and trouble. I cannot say all this is so enjoyable after all, and I have never experienced any actual delight after a successful operation, but generally a low melancholy and wish for retirement. The muscles of my legs were considerably contracted by the constant wet, and I was stiff for a length of time; but the application of Kayaputih oil (I believe in England it is called cajupute oil, an invaluable medicine in these countries), and gentle exercise, soon brought me round. The Dyaks for some weeks gave a great deal of trouble in the division of their plunder; some of the people

who remained at home, and refused to follow, were fined. Shortly afterwards I went to Saráwak for a change, and to obtain medical treatment, my breathing organs being provokingly out of order, refusing to play without pumping very heavily.

September, 1856.—Seldom have I heard of Dyaks embracing the Mahommedan religion, and there seem to be two reasons for this. First, their love of pork fat affords a great inducement for them to remain in the creed of their fathers; secondly, the character of the Malayan race does not display power or honesty enough to constitute any proselytising agency. A Banting Dyak chief had lately been misconducting himself in various ways, and in consequence, received a cold shoulder from most of his tribe, and lost his household; he then, making a virtue of a necessity, became a Mahommedan. A few days after his conversion took place, some of the Malays and Dyaks were sitting with me, and one Pangeran extolled loudly the act of Malong, and said, "God Almighty has opened his heart to the truth, and received him into his safe keeping," at which a Dyak chief exclaimed, "We do not mind so much Malong having entered the Islamite religion, but we find fault with his having no [redacted]cart at all, and leaving all his old friends, relations, and family, without a regret; but as he has now

separated from us, we wish him well." My remark to the Dyak was that he spoke the truth, but, as a rule, I never say a word for or against in religious matters.

October, 1856.—A party of Chinamen were about to take up their abode in Batang Lupar for the purpose of working gold, and this led me to hope that it would prove the cause of a more prosperous state of trade and revenue, &c. I proceeded up the river to meet the Dyak chiefs about the land, and the Chinese would be to a certain degree under the superintendence of those chiefs; so, as usual, a conference was held on the ground. I asked them whether they felt inclined to receive strangers into their country to work gold, and give them a sufficient quantity of land to furnish them with means of providing a livelihood. The chiefs seemed remarkably pleased at the idea, and promised them every means of support, as well as protection. With this understanding I proceeded to look for the gold, further inland. We bivouacked for the night on the banks of a gravelly stream, but the insects were so numerous that I could not close an eye, and to my disgust I found a leech had got into my ear, and this it took some time to withdraw. In the morning we clambered the high mountains of Batang, and took up our quarters under a large overhanging rock, capacious enough to

afford shelter for thirty people; the side of this hill was steep, with some rivulets running down; in these gold was found in small quantities, but of the very best quality.

A fine expansive view presented itself from this mountain over the low land of Sakarang bearing N.E. The Dyaks often come to this rock to dream, and commune with spirits, preparatory to committing some outrage. The sides of the hills have rocks cropping out, and among these there are holes, with numerous bats flying about at the entrance of them; thousands might be killed with a stick. Dyaks are fond of their flesh, and say it is sweet; we caught a few about the size of a rat and very clean. Natives say these cavities enter a long way into the mountain, and they related one incident of a Dyak who was half-witted and lived nearly all his life in this locality. One-day while in search for bats, he entered a cave, and when inside fell asleep; on awakening he had forgotten the way out, had followed another path, but lost himself for more than a month, at the end of which he came out on the other side of the mountain. He told his relations he had kept himself alive the whole time on bats; that often he saw daylight peeping through several apertures above and around him, but not accessible as exits; that he wandered he knew

not where, among the many crevices; and when he slept the bats fed off the tops of his fingers, his ears, and lips, and in daylight he retaliated by feeding off them. My companion told me this man's name, and declared some living people saw him when he came from his wanderings in the cave, where his relations thought he was dead, and they saw that his ears, lips, and fingers had been gnawed off.

This is a magnificent country for the cultivation of pepper and coffee; the soil is excellent, and tobacco, Dyaks say, grows luxuriantly.

November, 1856.—My principal Orang Kaya had lost his wife, and was now in great distress; lounging about, badly clothed, without head-dress or jacket, he looked the picture of misery. He sadly wanted a *head*, and proposed a shamefully treacherous scheme for getting one from the up-river Dyaks, which I let him understand very freely would not do on any account, and told him, as a chief and an old man, he should set a better example. He was labouring under this monomania for weeks, but I did not give him entirely the cold shoulder, as I found a little gentle sympathy and coaxing was the best means of keeping him quiet. After two months he gave up the thought as a bad job, and then took unto himself a young wife of low rank, and in so doing gave great offence to all

his old family, who would not receive the new acquisition in the same house. Besides this, he had married before feasting the spirits raised by his late wife's death; and the other chiefs held a council for the purpose of fining him. He told them, "You may do what you will; if I have behaved wrong, I am ready to pay a fine according to custom; but I am now the same as a Malay, for I wear breeches." By a parity of reasoning, a Lingga Dyak Christian once told me his wife was all prepared to become a convert to Christianity, because Mrs. —— had given her a gown.

Two elderly men (Lingga Dyaks) called on me one day in my small bungalow, one of whom was a Christian named Jalaping, a disagreeable-looking though good-natured fellow, and more disposed to let his sinews for hire than most of these independent herds. His manner was somewhat affected, owing to intercourse with Malays; and when he was admitted into one's presence, he always rushed to seize the hand, which he raised to his mouth and nose, leaving often some imprint of sirih and penang juice on it. This was the height of exquisiteness. Many, however, of the more primitive tribes offer their fists, and sometimes assume the most extraordinary attitudes through nervousness. But to revert to my friend Jalaping, who had been sitting with his companion chewing

sirih, with, I believe, extreme emptiness of thought, while I had been bathing; after this, while whistling, as was my wont on such occasions, and handling the hair-brush before a looking-glass, Jalaping observed: "Tuan, what makes the noses of the white men so large and straight? Do your nurses pull them out every morning when you are young? or is it natural?" Being somewhat nonplussed for a reply, I answered, "Sigi Berkenia" (naturally so, or only so); and he added, "Ours are always so soft and small, and do what I will to mine, I can't make it improve."

CHAPTER V.

Braiun — Visitors — Summoned to Saráwak — Small-pox — Rough journey—Conversation with friend—Our adventures—Pleasure on arrival—Speedy return—Stunning report—Departure—Europeans at Lingga wounded—Departure for Saráwak—Meet the Rajah—Appearance of things—Useless apprehensions—The enemy's flight—Their extreme distress—A panic—My return to Sakarang—Dyak head-taking—Pursuit—Night watching and pulling—Quick return—Alligator's grip—Wonderful recovery—Expedition to Sadok—Sandom again—Ascent of Sakarang river—Scenes—Confidence of Dyaks—Communings—Council of war—Land march—Sight of Sadok—Sudden fresh—Ascent of mountain—First alarm—Second ditto—Wounded and killed—Night quarters—Summit—Iron anchor—Fortify our position—Parties foray below—Enemy in rear—State of camp—Continued rain—Our last attack and failure—Obliged to descend—Enemy's yelling—Reach boats—Disasters of ditto—Our descent and troubles—Safe arrival at home.

December, 1856.—A FRIEND who had been suffering from a low state of health joined me in my small abode on Braiun Hill. The clear and exhilarating atmosphere of the place soon wrought a change in his condition. We especially enjoyed the moonlight nights, and sauntered about till very late hours. I indulged in one long march over hill and dale with gun and dogs, and viewed, I believe, as fine a tract of country as man could set eyes on. The highest hill I

crossed did not exceed 800 feet, and the ridge appeared to extend about ten or twelve miles; then a vale, and then another ridge of the same description, and between them a high mountain of about 3000 feet, presenting a striking peep of beauty and grandeur. This mountain is a good way off. At its foot the Chinese are working gold, and the intermediate vales are used for Dyak farming ground, and invariably possess sparkling streams running through them. The soil is super-excellent, washed down from the slopes on either side in the rainy season. I dream of a period when this fair land will be covered with plantations of sugar or other commodities. Beyond doubt it is well adapted for cultivation. I called at one Dyak house, the chief of which I knew well, as he had been my courier on many expeditions, and was a good blunt fellow, with the limbs of a horse. His right name was Egu, but he had been dubbed Jowing, which is the name of the poisoned barb of the Sumpit arrow.

In returning the sun shone piercingly hot, but a thick towel wrapped round the head, or some large leaves placed under the cap, protect the most important part, and the face only suffers. This is not of any consequence, as good looks are of little consideration in jungles, activity and strength of muscle being the only physical qualities really prized.

A party of Dyak ladies visited us some days ago, and after sitting a while, the young married one of the party, named Dundun, said she had climbed the hill purposely to ask if we were clever at *touching*, or bergamah, as her aunt was sick and had been afflicted for years; all their doctors had failed to cure her. This girl was tossing and fondling an infant quite in civilised fashion. Another girl of darker hue and jet black eyes, with rather a wicked expression, informed us she was glad to make our acquaintance, as now she would ask for tobacco and beads whenever she felt inclined. They don't consider such remarks as begging, and my friend opened the treasures which he had brought purposely for such visitors, and dealt each a bundle of beads. Two of them were presented with a small mirror into the bargain. I complained of his partiality for the prettiest. They, however, seemed to take it as a matter of course, and shortly after bade us adieu. They were all above the average in looks, and all nicely dressed, decorated with the white shell armlets which are so becoming in their way; but the disfiguring juice of the sirih and betel nut was bestowed freely over their lips, which reminded me of Peter Pindar's line—

"A lady's lips are cherries steeped in brandy."

Small parties of Dyak women are frequently to be seen wandering over these hills, and never without carrying a knife, which they use for various purposes, particularly for cutting vegetables or other edibles. On meeting any of them the never-failing questions pass—Where are you going? or From whence have you come? It is desirable to answer politely; but the Malays always make some far-fetched or round-about reply to these simple creatures.

My friend returned to his home with restored health and vigour. A little change and society generally set one up when hipped or low, which is a common occurrence in our lonely state of life. Miss Martineau, in her "Eastern Life," gives some useful hints on keeping the mind from flagging. I believe a good book, even a novel, and a profuse perspiration, are indispensables in this country for health and happiness.

The day after the departure of my friend, while on my way to Sakarang, I met a man bearing a letter, which I found was an express from the principal official in Saráwak, requesting me to proceed there to be present at the Chinese New Year, at which time he had received intelligence that the Bank Chinese gold-workers, under the plea of erecting a new idol in the Tepakong, were coming in force to attack the place, overthrow the Government, and establish their own

independent rule. There were yet ten days in which to make the necessary preparations of boats, &c., and unfortunately at this juncture my principal Sakarang leader, Abang Aing, was laid up with a second attack of small-pox, which had been for some months playing sad havoc among our people. Indeed, near the mouths of small streams the stench was most offensive from the decaying bodies. When first taken with the unmistakable symptoms, they were left to look after themselves. The consequence was the disease proved fatal in almost every case. The poor creatures had not the remotest chance of recovery if delirium attacked them; but where inoculation was practised, the average amount of deaths did not exceed one per cent. The inhabitants (particularly the Dyaks) have an extraordinary fear of this disease, and never speak of it without a shudder. On making inquiries after a person's health, the question is put in a whisper for fear the spirit might hear, and it is termed by various names, the most usual being jungle flowers or fruits.

But to return to the thread of my narrative. Abang Aing, the Malay chief, had himself been conveyed to the fort. He was then suffering from bad feet, the last inconvenience of small-pox. He had suffered very severely, and no one had been more anxious about him than myself, for I well knew his loss would be

irreparable. He spoke very kindly and to the purpose, telling me plainly he did not like the sound of reports, and begged me to be careful. He regretted he could not go himself, but would send a younger brother, and urge the Orang Kaya to accompany me, and he promised to arrange so as to follow me if anything serious really occurred. No Christian could have offered advice in a kinder tone or better spirit. I had acquainted my friend with what was occurring, and he joined me at the mouth of the Lingga, and we proceeded in the same boat, a heavyish one, but capable of standing a certain amount of sea which we expected to encounter at this season of the year in the north-west monsoon. After one day's work we were obliged to seek shelter in a small creek. The surf was a foaming and roaring mass all along the coast, so here we stayed happily in a haven until a favourable opportunity presented itself. There was not a single habitation on this stream, and the mosquitoes by night, and sand-flies always, somewhat pestered us. Moreover, there was not a dry spot of ground in the vicinity. The banks on either side were of black mud, covered with a network of the mangrove roots, which extend far out into the sea at high water. The next stage of soil, which has been reclaimed, produces the nipah palm, and in the next

drier stratum than this again the beautiful nibong palm flourishes, interspersed with a variety of other jungle shrubs.

In consequence of the inclemency of the weather, and after attempting to make way more than once, the time for action began to draw nigh, and I was becoming anxious; so after making enquiries about the distance by land, we started on the sandy beach at low tide. My friend and I left the crew to make the best of their way on the first lull. We had to wade many streams, which were deep in mud, and in the centre of one we nearly came to a standstill altogether, but pulled our legs through after the greatest difficulty. We were surprised to meet a crowd of women and children making their way towards this low water-mark for shell fish, or any other kind of edible monstrosity; they passed me without heed, but at a little distance, when confronting my companion, they set up a prodigious yell and fled, some in one direction, some in another, and rushed screaming far away. We were much amused at this demonstration, and could only account for it by supposing that Mr. ——'s beard had been the cause of the panic. His apparel too somewhat added to his commanding aspect—he wore a tight jersey, with a big white towel round his head. This, and his tall figure and long black beard, must

have occasioned consternation among the female fishers, who had hitherto probably never evolved such a being out of their inner consciousness.

We reached the mouth of the Samarhan river in the afternoon, and found a boat, which, as we considered, the importance of the service entitled us to take. And now there were nearly thirty miles before us by water. The sun was smarting hot, as it only shines before an approaching shower; and the hotter it is, the harder it pours afterwards. With only two lads, and without a covering of any kind, we commenced our pull. My friend's occupation was to keep the water bailed out, as his paddling powers were limited. He expressed himself gradually stronger and stronger against all rebellious Chinese, and declared the heaviest penalty should be inflicted upon such reprobates. We had to get out and dance our craft over some of the points where the surf ran heaviest, and at length entered the mouth of the Saráwak river; with the tide still running ebb, our progress was slow. Just after entering, it began to rain in torrents, with a squall in our teeth, against which we could not move, so we jumped on to the mud bank, pulled the light canoe among the nipah palms, and sought what shelter we could among the leaves. The cold rain gave us plenty of water to drink, streams running down the centre of the palm-

leaves, and in a minute we were drenched to the skin; and in five more, we were so cold as to be shivering as if snow had been a foot deep on the ground. When the squall had somewhat abated, and the flood tide had made, we again set off, and making slow progress ascended the river; it was a comfort to pull, just to keep the blood circulating. All boats were crouching under the banks, covered in with mats and emitting volumes of smoke, in which the crews were happy. How the eyes of the natives can stand it, has always been a mystery to me. One of the lads with us was of considerable respectability; his father, who resided in Saráwak, had been for a length of time attached to the Government. This youth was a sharp fellow, and had worked all day with the greatest goodwill and activity. He now requested permission to stop for a few minutes at a garden, where he said he could obtain some fruit. I could not object, but thought the detention anything but agreeable, and pine-apples, although nice at other times, would not be proper food for shivering people, for whom alcohol was much better. He kept us waiting an unconscionable length of time, until my friend was nearly beside himself with vexation, and his emphatic vociferations amused me so much as to cause me to forget all other discomforts. We reached Saráwak at 9 P.M.; it had not ceased raining

the whole way up, and we had been on the trudge and pulling since 8 A.M. On getting on land, we rushed about, stiff and cramped, to obtain warmth, and in a short time a kind Samaritan came to our relief, and made us some super-excellent punch, telling us while we were enjoying it that considerable alarm had been felt for our safety. An express boat had just been despatched for the purpose of picking up our remains on the sea-coast, and the dinner had been left on the table untouched, in consequence of the fidgettiness of our friends. It was now ready and at our disposal. Greatly was it enjoyed; and our adventures and mishaps were related with much gusto while we sat up until a late hour enjoying the society of old friends. People may preach that it is bad to indulge in conviviality, and by so doing we injure our health and scandalize society in general; but he surely must be a poor mortal who does not feel the enlivening influence of a social glass. No bad effects followed from our wet skins, and it had been an agreeable cruise to me, as I had a friend who was always pleasant in conversation, and so peculiar under difficulties that he caused even these to be a source of enjoyment.

In looking around and listening to a variety of reports, there was no very alarming news. Enquiries had been made in the locality of the Chinese as to the

origin of this intended outbreak, but without any certain results. There had been also some reports of hidden and secret paths having been constructed by their company, but none could be found. They had, moreover, been troublesome so often, that reports of dangers were now passed lightly over. So after a week of civilised life among friends, my comrade and I returned again, pulling our boat through a sweeping surf, in which we were once or twice very near filling. Many things were thrown overboard to lighten her; and Mr. ——, while lying in a drowsy sea-sick state, told me he thought every moment it would be the turn of his own box next, and he was lamenting the loss he should incur of so many small valuables which he had intended enjoying in his solitary abode.

On returning to Sakarang, my usual routine of life was soon resumed; the natives brought their cases for daily settlement, and visited me for the sake of a chat and a little tobacco. My new fort was getting into shape, and this was a source of great interest to me, as I had been the architect.

February, 1857.—Days passed without any particular incident to mark the time. One day in February, in which I had had an unusually severe attack of fever, and in the cool of the evening as I was in a dreamy torpor after the effects of the illness, one of my

Lingga fortmen rushed into my room, and in an excited and breathless voice exclaimed, "Tuan, the news is sorrowful—the Rajah is killed, Mr. Crookshank is gone to the jungles, and is supposed to be dead, and the remainder of the European community are either killed or fled in all directions."

Now I am not particularly liable to excitement, and at present I was too much reduced by the fever, and my bones ached too acutely, to permit of any sudden movement; but at length I tumbled out of bed, and soon found it was useless making further enquiries, as the bearer had only gathered the news from others, and not actually witnessed the facts. I thought, however, it might be true, and concluded at once that the Chinese this time had accomplished their long-projected design. A short note from Mr. Fox (who was the Resident in Sadong river) was also brought to me, and I wish I could here insert it, as a braver and more earnest-toned view of man's duty could not be imagined.

Before ten minutes were over more than a hundred men, with arms at their sides, had come into the fort, and I was in the midst of them in my dressing-gown. The boats were to be launched, and I resolved to start off in an hour with Abang Aing, who was now recovered. The fort soon became crowded with people

—a moving mass in the dim lamplight: most of them looked anxious, many whispered in groups, others approached, desirous of showing sympathy, but did not know how to do it. A few vociferated, others swore in a determined manner they would murder every man named Chinaman; but most sat quietly on their haunches. My fortmen were busy arranging arms and ammunition among the crowd, and then I addressed them, saying "That I had heard the news; and if they were desirous of having any other leader than myself at the present time, either Abang Aing or any one else they may like to appoint, I would willingly yield up the position; but whoever was leader should do his duty, and the remainder follow and assist him to the utmost." None responded or replied to what I said, so I left directions about the safety of the country, and the main part of the force was to follow when they had provisioned themselves, and were properly equipped with arms and other necessaries. I had stopped all workmen, to decrease expenses; and Aing and I started off in a boat which was small but very fast. We had with us twenty-two picked followers. I had dressed myself in native costume, to prevent any Chinamen picking me out for a pot shot, not that there was anything peculiar about it, as I invariably used a Malay dress. What with the

excitement and strong doses of quinine, I was fast recovering, for the fever never lasts long after the crisis is over. Generally speaking, the only harm done is that it leaves one in a low, dejected state. The next morning, when a little below the mouth of the Lingga, we met a boat which we soon found contained Europeans; and on closing her, found the bishop, his family, and nearly all the white community of Sarawak were in her, on their way to Lingga as a place of refuge. Not a little was my delight to hear of the Rajah's safety. This alone brought sunshine over me, as I was not doubtful for an instant that our native force would be sufficiently strong to smash the rebels, and re-establish the Rajah's rule. He had issued directions that Lingga was to be the rendezvous, and he was expected the day after, as further proceedings were to be discussed there. Mr. and Mrs. Crookshank had arrived there the previous evening, both severely wounded. The table of justice was converted into a bed-place for Mrs. Crookshank, whom only a month before I had the pleasure of meeting for the first time in glowing health and beauty. Her life had been saved by a miracle, and her patient endurance under such a trial deserves the highest admiration and praise.

Mrs. ——, careworn from excess of fatigue and anxiety, with an infant in arms, accompanied me to

my small quarters, which were soon filled with men, women, and children. There was little room and no comfort, but there was perfect safety to life, and no fear of any enemy approaching them. As the Rajah did not arrive on the succeeding day, I left for Saráwak; and when bidding farewell to the wounded, I felt exasperated with the Chinese miscreants, whom cowardice only had prevented from committing more serious outrages. On arriving in Saráwak, I found the Rajah on board the Borneo Company's steamer "Sir James Brooke," anchored off the town.

Her smoke had been descried as he was leaving for Lingga; and on her entering, he proceeded to the town in her, and after a few shots summarily delivered by her captain, the rebels fled, leaving a few killed and wounded. It is not my intention here to give a detailed account of this insurrection, which has already been so ably narrated by Mr. Spenser St. John and others, but a few of the transactions subsequent to the first outbreak (and to my arrival in Saráwak), I will presently mention.

The Rajah I found to be only the worse for bad feet. He had received severe wounds here on the night of his marvellous escape; but otherwise his health was good; and now he was busily employed writing letters, and endeavouring to regain that prestige which had been

so materially damaged. Our great difficulty was to recover some part of the revenue, now entirely scattered. There was not a bit of a document extant to tell the tale of former times. A mass of ashes, and confusion, and ruin lay around. Half-habitable débris of houses only were left. The trees for many hundred yards around the fires were nearly all burnt black and leafless, and those remaining alive were drooping.

The work before us was to make the most out of the wreck, and to renew the tumble-down fortifications sufficiently to defend ourselves when the steamer left. Our party was unpaid, and consequently dilatory; but by dint of patching and hammering the planks were refastened, and with angular towers the place was again defensible. Ere many days we fortunately recovered a small quantity of opium, and this gave us some means of improvement. We lived aboard the steamer, and without wishing to be ungrateful, I never had worse quarters even in the jungles. Never a night passed without our getting wet by the rain pouring through the awnings, and the lower deck was rendered poisonous by a fresh coating of red ochre. We were not permitted to live ashore, as danger was apprehended; however our affairs were progressing as favourably as the most sanguine could expect. The Dyaks had arrived, and proceeded to

their work of vengeance immediately. Reports were daily brought of the number of Chinese that had been put to the sword. The nearest place held by a picked body of the rebels was distant about twelve miles. A small force of Malays, and several hundreds of Sakarang and Saribus Dyaks, were organised to attack it, and we were much delighted on hearing of the successful result. The same evening, when the shrill yells of the Dyaks were resounding in the distance, and I casually remarked that they had taken heads, poor Mrs. Middleton, who was standing near, and had had two children mercilessly hacked to pieces by the ruffians on the night of the insurrection, exclaimed, "Ah! that is music to my ears!" The Dyaks had brought a number of trophies, which the next morning were being cooked on the banks in front of the Chinese shops. The respectable Chinese traders recognised some of the leading rebels to be among the dead, and showed their marked satisfaction that such was the case. The Rajah now took up his quarters in the fort, and we all collected there, and, in comparatively reduced circumstances, messed and lived together. We were thoroughly merry, and as far removed from despondency as could be, for fortune already seemed smiling on Sarawak. The fact that the current of events had run so smoothly up to the present time, fully accounted

for the panic produced on the minds of the population when the Government was so nearly overthrown in a single hour. The white man's rule had been hitherto considered invulnerable, and the simple people never dreamt that any attempt could be made to shake such a foundation. Some apprehension had been felt for the good faith of the people of Lingga, but there was no cause for alarm, as unless the natives had been absolute enemies at the time, they would not take such an unfair advantage of adversity and misfortune, as to commit further injuries on the European community. Throughout my experience, with very few exceptions, the inhabitants have been kind and sympathising in hours of difficulty.

After we had lived a short time in the fort, a report was brought that the Chinese had fled, and abandoned all possessions on the banks of the river. The Rajah then determined to push on to Berlidah, which is about twenty-miles from Sarawak, and this was to be the basis of operations. We accordingly took up our quarters on the same spot as had been inhabited a few days previously by the rebels, who had left little behind them but desolation and misery. Our native force of Dyaks and Malays commenced their attack on the Chinese without any further delay, and proceeded inland for that purpose. The following day a

report was brought that the Chinese had departed from Bauh, and were in full retreat towards Sambas. Once having passed the border, they were clear of our jurisdiction; but the dogs of war were at their heels, harassing and cutting them off upon every opportunity. Their plan of retreat was very skilfully arranged, and a fanatical idea of the infallibility of their Joss (idol), which they carried with them, kept them in order. We were helpless to a certain extent, in being unable to gather together an organised force, or we should have routed them without doubt, and fearful loss of life would have been the consequence. In looking back on these events, it was perhaps fortunate that we were not able to act more unitedly against them; but if it had been within our power at that time, the Joss undoubtedly would have been overturned, and the people exterminated. The most merciful of men could not deny that they had richly merited such a punishment.

They protected this image with the utmost caution, keeping their women and children closely around it, while their bravest men acted as a guard on the outside. They had advanced a considerable distance before the Dyaks approached. The Dyak leaders, on closing, were at once shot down. This made the others more cautious; but they had an idea

that killing a fowl and killing a Chinaman were about equal in point of difficulty. But the Chinamen had our best rifles and arms, with all the necessary accoutrements belonging to them. The Dyaks, whose swiftness of foot left the more stolid part of the force behind, then changed their tactics, and did not dare appear in the open road again, but entered the jungle on either side of the enemy, and thus harassed them continually, cutting off every straggler without mercy. The Chinamen were powerless to follow these wild, cat-like fellows into the close jungles, and were obliged to submit to their fate as they best might. The road over which the rebels were retreating was one continued track of clothes, valuables, silver, plate, and dead bodies. To enable their retreating force to gain a few minutes while passing precipitous places, they strewed the road with rice, and threw here and there a valuable article to retard and keep off their pursuers. This continued for several successive days, during which the Chinese must have suffered most intensely. They were not even able to cook or sleep by night or day. They now arrived at a point which must have ended their career, if it had been properly held. This was Gombang Hill, which forms the frontier between Sambas and Saráwak: here was a long Dyak house past which the Chinese could not go unless the in-

habitants were favourably disposed to them. They were obliged to come to a halt here, and defend themselves. The ascent of the hill is exceedingly steep and rugged, and during the two days they remained in this position, they had time to parley with the Dyaks in the front, with whom they had been in the habit of trading for years. However, this alone would not have provided them with a safe-conduct, if they had not resorted to liberal bribery. The consequence was, that our party, on rising and reconnoitring one fine morning, found the enemy had fled past this last difficulty, and were safe on the Sambas side. Many of the Dyaks, however, still pursued them, and they kept up the ferment about guarding the Joss, which the Dyaks called "Tuan Pekong;" they told me that they thought it to be a woman made of gold. Tepakong is the name of the most sanctified idol, and, with the delight of a little variation, which so invariably takes place, it had been received by the Dyaks as Tuan Pekong, being thereby invested with personality. On several occasions the Dyaks spoke to the rebels, who expostulated with them, and asked why they should be so hostile. At length the Dyaks returned, having done their work very effectually, though irregularly, and the Chinese escaped to Sambas, where they were all immediately disarmed, and placed under strict sur-

veillance in the Dutch jurisdiction. They were in a starving condition, and told their tale of woe in a deplorable tone, as only a Chinaman can when he has once lost spirit. It is a well-known trait in their character, that they are daring and audacious up to a certain point, but on meeting with any severe reverse they lose spirit, and behave in an utterly dastardly manner, giving way to the most child-like lamentations.

Shortly after our return to Saráwak, a Dutch man-of-war steamer called to offer assistance, and H.M.S. "Contest" also arrived, commanded by Sir. W. Hoste, to offer protection to British subjects. Her captain lived at the table of the happy family for some days. Nothing further in this episode in Saráwak history happened at the time; it was the first shake she had felt, and it must be confessed a severe one it was. Although there was no cause for alarm or apprehension, yet for years after, the population were so nervous, that the most frivolous accident occasioned a panic. One that occurred a few days ago, before the Chinese were attacked at Lidah Tanah, was ridiculous in the extreme. We heard, first of all, a suppressed clatter of voices, gradually rising in tone—silence in one direction, but the noise increasing until it extended far and wide, and the words, "The Chinese are

coming!" were audible. Then yells and screams followed, with the quick clatter and splutter of the Chinese language.

The Malays pulled their wives and families to the boats, to be ready for immediate flight, either up or down the river; and the Chinese traders concealed the Saráwak colours—some displaying the rebel's banner instead. This confusion was very absurd, for no one knew the cause, nor were we able to find out, within hailing distance of the steamer. So I pulled in the direction where the sound first arose, and found that a few Malay women had been gathering some over-ripe padi from a neighbouring farm. While doing so, one stumbled over the carcase of a dead Chinaman; she shrieked, and the others shrieked also, and so the alarm spread far and wide amongst thousands of souls. All being quiet again, I took my departure for Sakarang, after a six weeks' stay in Saráwak. The party had returned from Lingga, and were safe at their homes. I was some days on the voyage, as my boat was heavily laden with cattle, of which the Rajah had made me a present.

The Sakarang fort was nearly completed, and presented a fine-looking exterior. All the Dyaks gazed at it in wonder when they came down to trade. It was merely a strong fortified house, well protected

from any sudden surprise, or treacherous attacks. A sketch of it is to be seen at the title page. A rough estimate of its cost amounts to about 350*l.*, and the material is capable of lasting eighteen or twenty years. The weather was now delightful, with the sun hot, but the air well cooled by the soaking the earth had received during the north-east monsoon.

The morning of my arrival I sat among a crowd of people, partly of my own followers, and some from the village, and gave a detailed account of the proceedings that had lately taken place in Saráwak. One gets in the habit of spinning yarns, and fighting battles over twice, when topics of conversation are so limited. I entertained some doubts whether the late Chinese rebellion in Saráwak would not make other doubtful friends restless, and this had hastened my departure from Saráwak. On the afternoon of my arrival, as I was about to indulge in a siesta after the late fatigues, two Dyak chiefs came expressly from Saribus to tell me a head-hunting party was alert on the coast. This was trustworthy news from old friends, and I at once determined to stop any further onslaught. It was only a party of five boats which had crept out of some of the creeks in Rejang waters, commanded by Sadji and Lambur; the former had taken a head, and his boat was seen returning into Saribus sounding the

head yells—and Lambur was still hovering about in search for one, and was supposed to be bound for the mouth of this river, which was unprotected.

I must confess that it was with considerable reluctance that I again made ready, as I was quite prepared to enjoy a few quiet nights; but it would so certainly have been at the expense of some lives at the mouth, that my conscience would not have rested very peaceably. So getting my boat again in readiness, and summoning my boy Bagus, a favourite follower, I asked him whether he would accompany me? His instant reply was—"Of course; if you go, we must follow." Taype soon had a boat's crew ready of old followers, and we set off. My kit on such an occasion was scant,—clothes, two of each sort, mat, one small pillow, one shawl—given me by a dear sister, which seeming to be everlasting; the shawl, and sister's love too, it is to be hoped,—a sword, double-barrelled smooth bore, blunderbuss, telescope, rice in abundance, salt, a little salt fish, a few bottles of sherry, a little brandy, two cooking utensils—one for boiling rice, and another for hashing anything. My boat's crew were not very particular, seeing their master so frugally supplied; and there is little doubt that Sir Charles Napier's theory is a true one—if a man is in health and strength, he requires little, and

nice gentlemen, who can't move without their making as much display as a dancing mistress, should not soil their fingers in primitive countries. We started just after sunset, and Aing was to follow the next day, as a man with a family and numerous wives could not be expected to move without some longer notice. We pulled from 5 p.m. until midnight, when we reached the mouth of Lingga, but did not enter. No mosquitoes could disturb us that night, and all hands snored as soundly as if they had been in beds—luxuries they had not seen for two months.

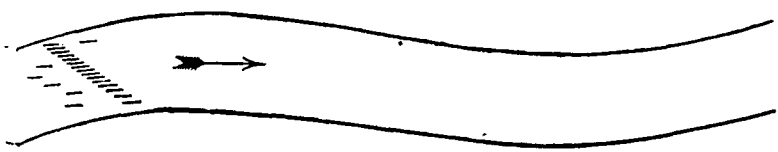
At dawn, two small canoes with a few Banting Dyaks in them were passing, and I sent them with a message to the chiefs, telling them to follow without delay, and knew it would not take them long to be under way. I was glad to find that we were in time to prevent the enemy committing any devastation at the mouth, as they had not been heard of, or seen to pass. Again we pushed on another thirty miles, and took up our quarters in a small stream on the coast, named Si Ludam; and here lay in ambush by ourselves. The Saribus river was only six miles off, and at its mouth the enemy were reported to be waiting with four boats; however, I did not dare go with our single boat to meet them, as the risk would have done no good.

At night we drew our narrow craft outside to watch, so as to keep the enemy from passing, or if they had entered they would probably have sunk us; we had arms, but they possessed numbers and strength. We held on to a pole all night, the moon shining brightly; the mat awnings were collected, and all the muskets ready at a moment's call. The boat's crew were divided into two, to keep watch half the night each; I kept the first part with one, and Taype the second. If the enemy had approached, we should have cast off and been ready to keep our distance while blazing into them. Taype was roused at midnight, and rose rubbing his eyes. His first remark was, "Ah! I thought you were going into Saribus yesterday; if so, we should have been demolished without salt, for what could one small boat do against theirs?" Then I rolled myself in the shawl and slept soundly as a babe, until day broke, and the glorious orb was casting its shadows over the distant hills, and through the hazy cool atmosphere. We again put into our creeping lair to be out of sight, and arranged the coffee, so bright an element in the traveller's happiness. When the tide had fallen sufficiently, the boat's crew dispersed to seek for edibles for our breakfast, with their persons immersed in mud and mire. A watch was set on a point to signal if any boats were seen approaching.

We were successful in getting some fish, which had long feelers, and looked like dog-fish; these are pulled out of holes in the mud bank. People often get nasty wounds from the spikes on their backs, which are extremely poisonous, and the pain produced often causes delirium and fever. Brandy is the antidote. The natives have a barbarous plan of treating such wounds, viz., heating a wire till it is red hot, and then introducing it into the wound to cauterise it. But the poison has entered the whole system before this operation can be effected.

A log was brought to our boat covered several inches thick with oysters, pulled up from the bed of the stream. I was soon contemplating a dish of them warmed up with rice with no small degree of relish; they were very sweet, but I had some fear that shell-fish off wood would be unwholesome. However, no bad effect happened to me, but some of the crew were unwell in the course of the same day. We spent all the day by ourselves; in the evening a boat passed us going to Saribus; unfortunately our flag was showing above the bank at high water, and the stranger's crew must have discovered it. That evening we watched as on the previous night, and at one in the morning we heard the *krook, krooking* of many paddles coming from the Batang Lupar, and before morning we had a force of twenty-five

largish boats. We cooked early, and started directly the tide was favorable. An hour's pull took us to the entrance of Saribus, where there is a small creek, and here we found the unmistakable signs of Dyak cooking, and other remnants, showing plainly that our enemy had been here only the day before, but had gone, most probably, on hearing the news from the strange boat of yesterday. The question was now, whether they had returned home, or were still prowling about, for Dyaks will not go back to their homes, without using every effort to gain a head, so we determined to pull for Kaluka, and examine all the intermediate small creeks and bights in the way. We pulled and searched all the day without any success, and when night set in and our party had taken their last meal, we arranged



to creep up Saribus river noiselessly in hopes of meeting the party, who might have been only a short distance from us, with their boats hauled up in the jungles. At 9 P.M. we advanced, and it much interested me to see the plan of battle array the Dyaks adopted. They placed their boats abreast of each other, but each

one about three feet farther ahead than the next, close together, allowing only room for the paddles to be used. Thus they proceeded in a still evening, with a decreasing moon glittering over the ripples, rising and casting a reddish light over our wild but noiseless squadron. We pulled in this way for about ten miles, and I really thought more than once, I saw boats, but they either made off in time, or they were not boats at all, such a light being very deceptive. Just after midnight we drew into a small creek called Samarang, and there slept. I was awakened early the next morning by hearing voices calling to us, saying our boat was swamping, and rose to find that we had been so hard asleep on one side, that the gunwale was on a level with the water. We returned to Sakarang, stopping only a short time to cook, and with paddles alone pulled one hundred miles between 7 A.M. and half-past six in the evening. The tide had been with us the greater part of the way, but many never would credit the distance done in that time, and it remained a feat for the boat's crew to crow over for years. Afterwards I retired to my bed that evening for the first time since hearing the stunning report of Saráwak's downfall, and the Rajah's death.

While at Sakarang I was summoned by an old Dyak lady to attend her son, who had been seized

by an alligator when returning from his farm. He was bathing at the landing place, where a few poles were driven firmly into the bank to prevent the large log, (which is used as a passage to boats) from swaying to and fro with the tides. A huge alligator seized him by the foot, and was pulling him down when he caught hold of one of the poles. The monster pulled so strongly that he was obliged to release his hold of the upper pole, and seize a lower one, to which he clung for his life. Fortunately a boat approached, and the alligator then dropped his foot and made off.

The wounded man dragged himself up the bank and there lay exhausted, with his foot merely attached to the leg by a small piece of flesh. The wound was ghastly, with the bones protruding just above the ankle. Some of the nerves must have still been unsevered, as he had some sensation in his toes. I could do nothing but give him clean cloth, and recommend him to keep the limb cool. A doctor, I suppose, would have at once amputated the foot. The man did not appear to suffer any acute pain, but was in an exhausted condition.

Four years subsequently to this event the same individual walked into my house, informed me he had quite recovered, was married, and had a young family.

On examining the limb, I found it was six inches short, and he was walking on the end of his shin bone; the foot was drawn up and useless. I asked him if he had since retaliated on the alligator tribe. He replied, "No, I never wish to kill an alligator, as the dreams of my forefathers have always forbidden such acts; and I can't tell why an alligator should have attacked me, unless he mistook me for a stranger, and that was the reason the spirits saved my life." I feel sure no European would have recovered from such a wound without medical treatment.

Another expedition was in view, which I had obtained permission from Saráwak to undertake, viz., to arrange a force to make an attack on Sadok, a mountain supposed in Dyak annals to be impregnable. Their legends and songs make mention of it as being the Grand Mount, towards which no enemy dare venture; and our arch-enemy Rentap had been located on it since the fall of Sungei Lang. He was here supported by the Sakarang Dyaks located in the interior, who were hostile to us, and also by the inhabitants of the interior of Saribus, who offered every aid and assistance so long as he occupied this eyrie, which stood as a nucleus and basis far removed from danger, and to which they all might, in case of need, retire to find a haven from the stranger's rule, which thwarted

their head-hunting propensities. He was called Rajah Ulu (inland Rajah), and was the centre of all the opposition to the rule of the Rajah of Saráwak. His fortification was small, and near 5000 feet above the sea, with precipitous approaches almost on all sides of it. With the force I had at my disposal, the undertaking was no light one, and yet no force could be really better adapted for the kind of work, although quite undisciplined.

My intention was to pass over the top of Sadok mountain, march down to the head of Saribus, and lay waste the whole of that country, then on my way back try Rentap's fort, after his supplies, both men and food, had been swept to a distance.

Sandom was again the guide, and we were deep in council night and morning. Strips of "Times" newspapers were arranged over an extensive flooring, exhibiting the different streams and branches, mountains and pathways, with marks where houses stood. The acuteness of Sandom was not to be surpassed. He was a dry, plain-spoken fellow, without the hesitation of deceit or nervousness. What he related one could not have any doubt about. I had held an inner council of war in my bedroom, consisting of five of the principal chiefs, for the purpose of sounding them. They merely replied, that if I thought it desirable to

make such an attack, of course they were willing, and must follow.

May, 1857.—After that I called a council of Dyaks, and told them to be ready at a certain time. Up-river communication was stopped. The Rajah had engaged to take a force from Saráwak to Saribus, which would act as a blind, while I proceeded up the Sakarang in small fast boats.

While talking with Sandom one night, he indulged in a glass of wine, and the next morning informed me that his dream had been very adverse. "In fact," he said, "I feel all in a tremor about it now." The purport was, that he was running from a wild animal, which chased him with gaping jaws, within a few inches of his "chawat" (waist-cloth). The glass of wine had caused a nightmare to the abstemious system of Sandom, who was different from other Dyaks, never touching tobacco or sirih, or any other food than plain rice and salt. And now my thoughts and dreams were all directed and concentrated towards the destination of the coming expedition. I could not read or converse on any other subject. I seldom passed a night without starting up and repeating some oration in the Dyak or Malay language. My friend Mr. —— joined me, and was very anxious to accompany the expedition, but I steadily refused to take any other

European with me. He was not a strong walker, and was now suffering from sickness; therefore, in his case, it was out of the question. It grieved him much to be left behind. I was averse to take any volunteers, as the charge even of a native force occasioned me intense anxiety, and the addition of Europeans, unless they formed a sufficiently strong body to defend themselves in the event of their breaking down while marching, would be too great a drawback. I simply went singly on those expeditions to act as an adviser, and be protected as a queen ant among thousands of workers; still in that position I often found the work was more heartbreaking than glorious. The native feeling and policy, after being persuaded to enter far into the enemy's country, and when hemmed in with dangers, was to protect and stand by me. Any separation and straggling, or disobedience of directions, they were perfectly aware, would have led to our entire annihilation; and as long as they moved in a mass under one director no harm could come to the force. My old boat was painted and prepared anew, and her colours were waving by the bank, besides about a hundred other boats of all shapes and sizes, some very gorgeously fitted, whose crews were loitering about awaiting the start. Sadok was up the Sakarang river, and within only a few days' journey.

The force, therefore, had to be collected before we set forth in a body, as having to wait afterwards for loiterers and laggers, the news would travel far and wide, and obstacles would hinder us at every point.

June 2nd.—We had collected the force a short distance above the Sakarang fort, and this morning started in a drizzling rain. The Sakarang Malay boats were leading, I following, and I would not allow Dyaks to go past my position, as it would have led to much confusion and disorder, besides causing all the water to be fouled, and made undrinkable.

Sandom, as usual on such occasions, led the way with two small boats. We stopped to-night at Lentang Batang, the outer limit of friendly Dyaks. Here there is a boom across the river, to prevent an enemy from passing down to make an attack. A long Dyak house is situated on the bank, and the inhabitants keep watch over the boom. Between this point and Sadok the population are neither friends nor enemies; and as yet are little to be trusted. Above and around Sadok all are enemies of the blackest dye, and towards them we were bound.

Our fellows were amusing themselves in the Dyak house, and peals of laughter were coming from it. Upon such an occasion revelry is indulged in to almost an unlimited extent; and everybody considers he has

a right to chaff passers-by as he thinks fit. On such a force passing any woman pulling about, the whole body commences hemming and coughing significantly. We passed one elderly lady this morning, when the young men began their jokes, of which she did not seem to approve, and turned round, saying, "You had better meet with success, before you laugh at women." But in most cases they are as light-hearted and jovial as the stouter sex, and generally more skilful at repartee.

June 3rd.—We proceeded, pulling at a steady pace all day, although the weather was gloomy and drizzling, which damped the ardour of our party. We met Dyaks, who were not afraid of us, and were quite in the dark as to the movements of such a force. The Karangans (gravelly beds) were very close together, but in poling in our light boats, we made speedy way. It is a stirring scene to behold this performance, by men who have been all their lives at such work, and are now in their element in light canoes, with every man standing and striking the poles sharply down and lifting, as it were, their skiffs over the numerous impediments. Over reach after reach this continued. In the afternoon the sun shines forth, and the weather clears up. We stop on Karangan Bakki, and regardless of any regulated guard, where all keep their quota

of watch without being ordered. We set to work in different ways to prepare for cooking at night, and arrange resting-places. The small boats' crews haul their boats up, and make langkans; others, particularly the lazy Malays, keep to their boats for cooking, &c. Our men are behaving remarkably well, doing little injury to the surrounding gardens, which they have been warned not to touch, although the ancient custom was, that anything by the roadside is anybody's when on an expedition, and this is generally adhered to.

June 4th.—At 7 o'clock we regularly advanced, before which one had time to take coffee, biscuit, and a bathe—three invaluable necessaries before a man is at all himself; and then the work commenced, and was carried on uninterruptedly, with the exception of half an hour's rest at mid-day, until 4 P.M. I always found that three or four days of such wet and wearying labour were as much as Malays could stand; after that time many became sick with fever and ague. We met several Dyaks to-day, who spoke to us without any uneasy feeling, and did not attempt to run away. not even the females. I was particularly pleased with this sign of confidence and good faith in them. We did to-day the same distance as had taken us three days to do, when proceeding to attack Sungei Lang.

We stopped on a large Karangan. On arriving at this point we met a small party of Dyaks, who were staying here on their way down the river; the head man was known to me, and he declared he had not heard a breath of any force being under weigh, and said about two hours ago, while sitting on this gravelly bed, he concluded there must be a large body of boats coming up the river, as the place where he was sitting was soon covered with water, by the swelling of the river, and there had been no rain to cause it. He spoke as if it were a certainty; but I could scarcely credit such a fact, because the incline of the river is steep, and this place must have been considerably above the level of where we were. While sitting on a big stone above the Karangan, I surveyed a grand and inspiriting scene—at least it would have appeared so to most people; but for myself, a heavy gloom had been steadily settling for some days over my mind, though I was quite at a loss to account for it.

The sun had sunk in brightness, leaving a mellow light in its track, and twilight was fast fading into night, when our fellows cheerfully lighted their hundreds of fires for cooking; and the many blazes, surrounded by the merry voices and countenances in expectation of the coming meal, told me it was now time to retire and partake of my bit of dried fish and

rice, seasoned by a few wild vegetables, which really afford a delectable meal.

June 5th.—We reached Sungei Antu; and a little above this stream, on a rocky island, we decided to stop. The island afforded a good look-out around, and a fort placed on the top would be able to secure an extensive watch.

We thought of the danger of a fresh coming down, but as this was the driest season, no one apprehended anything of the kind. After an hour's rest, the party commenced to use their parangs (swords), and the island was soon stripped of its wiry-looking brush-wood vegetation. On the lower side of it there was a very extensive Karangan of shingle stones; the banks of each side of the main river were steep and hilly. Some spears were thrown by the enemy from the banks on some of our party, and one man was brought back severely wounded; this acted as a caution for them to take more care in future.

June 6th.—Parties were bringing in wood, and erecting a fort which was soon completed, with two rows of strong palings around it. Besides, the boats' crews threw up some kind of temporary fortifications around their boats—which were fastened as close as they would lie to this island—and by the banks. We left forty men well armed in the stockade, to take charge of

the whole remaining boats and baggage. All things of any value were stowed away in the stockade.

At 4 P.M. the grand council of war was held on the Karangan, which was crowded with human beings. Our force mustered about 4000 souls, 500 of which were Malays. In addressing them first of all, I said, "It was my intention to attack the upper Saribus inhabitants, to get at whom we should have to cross over the top of Sadok, and in proceeding I wished to advance without making any halt on the mountain. When the attack of the Saribus was finished, while returning we might make an attempt on Rentap's fort; but the object of the expedition was to devastate the country around the foot of Sadok." Few other remarks were passed. The order of marching we decided should be the same as on the Kajulan expedition. The Dyaks gave their different opinions of matters, and declared the omens had all been highly auspicious. They particularly inquired what tendency my dreams had evinced. I assured them that they were always favourable; then we broke up with the intention of starting next morning. I may mention that upon all such meetings I always did my best to dissuade these wild fellows from taking the lives of women and children. The division of plunder and captives was to be settled according to the established custom of

ages, half to go to the Government of all goods over 5*l.* in value, and half to the man who finds the plunder. By this method the Government is able to remunerate the Malays, who are the standing force, and not permitted to run wild as the Dyaks are.

The captives are generally ransomed after peace has been concluded between the tribes, and instead of exchanging prisoners according to civilised modes, they exchange captives for jars, each of which is supposed to represent the value of a man's life.

All night the voices and movements of our party were heard, and the pious Mahommedans seemed to add an extra tone of devotion to their lengthy orisons, which lasted far into the dreary hour of night, and were recommenced again long before daylight.

My kit contained the smallest and simplest assortment. Three suits of each kind of clothes, a Saráwak flag, some rice, salt fish and prawns, one small cooking utensil, a bundle of tea and coffee (the latter most important), a mat, which also answered the purpose of covering, made of light leaves interwoven together, and one stone bottle containing one and a half bottles of cognac; a double-barrelled smooth bore, single light minié, and 150 rounds for each; one pistol, sword, pocket-book, and Paley's "Natural Theology." Most of these things were carried by my own followers, or

boat's crew, who kept in front and behind me, and were armed with the best carbines. Aing was always within hail. Iron Anchor and Pangeran were ever the redoubtable leaders. The rear was commanded by the same Kaluka noble, an old man who could not possibly run away, and being the descendant of the true prophet (a seriff), would be sure to have a following in case of danger.

June 7th.—Early this morning we were in motion, and the start is always a disagreeable part of any business, particularly so when one is more or less cramped from having been confined to a small boat, with scarcely room for lying down; then to feel the weight of arms and ammunition is not pleasant.

I had entire confidence in Sandom as leader and guide. He had not only a thorough knowledge of the Dyak highways, but he was equally familiar with every byeway also. Our route lay over the left bank and away to the eastward. We had to ascend a hill of 500 feet high, which rose apparently straight out of the boats, and was very slippery. This was a *winder*, which brought my heart near the throat, but no stopping. From the top of it we descried Sadok grandly looming far in the distance, and a succession of hills betwixt it and ourselves; but after that first steep to it, which had drawn a perspiration, I

knew I was good for the whole day, and the top of Rappu, or the one end of Sadok mount, was to be our bivouac at night. Down we trudged again, and walked in the Buak stream for an hour, after which we reached a friendly Dyak house, and passed close to it, having the pleasure of being invited in by some pretty lasses, who came down offering presents of fowls and other little articles. After a few words, and a promise to visit them on the way back, we again advanced, and then traced a stream named Penabun, crossing over steep hills between its different turnings. Our wings on the march were irregularly placed, and it was utterly out of the question to expect that the Dyaks could keep in any order over these precipitous ups and downs. However, they tore through many places, breaking their shields and scratching their bodies, and often obliged to rest for lack of breath.

On reaching the foot of the spur which leads to Sadok, we stopped for a mid-day meal, and to take the last look at a refreshing running stream. Rentap's gongs were being sounded, and now the whole country was aware of our approach. We had a hard ten minutes' shower here. I divested myself of belt and arms to breakfast on a small gravelly bed; and while doing so a commotion arose, and as I thought it was

some alarm of an enemy, I remained still, but in another moment a flood of water came down this puny stream, and I had only bare time to pick up my arms and belt. The rice and the leaf (the latter a substitute for a plate) floated away with the fresh; thus quickly freshes come down in these countries, receiving an impetus from the streams off the sides of steep mountains. Some of our party had built sheds, but I was determined to move on, as Rappu was the point fixed on for the resting-place for the night, and I felt as strong as a horse yet. When I gave the order to advance, Orang Kaya Gassing came forward and expostulated; but something told me if we waited here we should have the whole country to-morrow holding the steep sides of Sadok against us. So I told him I should either advance or return home. The old man gave way, but muttered, "You may know the tactics of war at sea, but allow us to be more acquainted with land attacks." At 2 P.M. we commenced the ascent, taking a supply of water with us. Rappu was far distant, and it was as much as we could do to gain it before dark. The Dyaks at first hung back, but as soon as they saw we were fairly off, they buckled on their things and followed. At half-past four the first alarm was sounded by the leaders, which somewhat hastened our steps. I was not tired in the least,

though the hill was a steep ascent all the way. The Dyaks began to be wild, and a peak above us was pointed out as being Rappu. We walked steadily on, and our van was again progressing, only having had a slight brush with an outside squad of the enemy. Another half-hour, and another alarm, much louder than the previous one, accompanied by continual yells and screeches. This time I knew it was an enemy of importance, and I called each leading Malay chief by name, telling them to advance by my side to assist at the front. The Dyaks were now mad on the narrow ridge of this hill, retreating in all directions as pale as ghosts; more than once I threatened to shoot them if they crossed my path. We advanced, while hundreds of our party were in full retreat, leaving arms, &c., behind, and many of the Malays were among them. Then came Taype, sword in hand, and said, "Your force is cut to pieces in front." "Never mind, Taype, we must go on and assist, and you come too." He brandished his sword and gave a yell, but a few minutes after had fallen to the rear. Even the chiefs were nervous, and many of them very fatigued. The last hundred yards were almost perpendicular, and when mounting, I had to pull myself up with one hand by the stunted trees; added to this, there was a declivity of thousands of feet on each side. In ascend-

ing this part not more than twenty men were with me. My best fortman was wounded by a spear, and to assist him many of the others had left me. And now I must give credit to the Lingga people, for they were close at hand. I was within about five yards of the enemy, who were pitching spears from behind some wood on the brow of the hill, while we were underneath, and the spears went flying over my head and struck some of our party in the rear. Here I stood propped up against a tree, and poured thirty rounds from my smooth bore as fast as I could load, directing it into a place where I saw a movement among the leaves. After this I tried to ascend, but the Linggas literally collared me, and one clung so firmly to my sword-sheath that he was nearly pulling me backwards. The enemy were quieted, and my followers kindly promised to take care of me where I was, so here we sat on the side of this hill, at an angle of about 80°, the whole night. A few cross-sticks were placed for me to sit on. The yelling of our force sounded for thousands of yards along this narrow ridge, all being below, none above. One man held a shield at my back, and the youth who brought my provisions had never left my side. I told him to go to the rear and sleep, but he said, "The enemy may mash me where I stand, but I will not leave you."

Ten minutes after, he was snoring with his face on the ground, and no amount of rousing could wake him. I now felt happy, and after having taken three or four handfuls of eatables, was satisfied, the gloom having quite left me. I did not require the stone bottle of brandy that night, as the excitement had been sufficient. A bright and glorious moon arose and showed us our exact position. After an hour the old Dyak chiefs came and visited me, and spoke cheerfully, even old Gassing, who observed that he would send on his people in the morning to clear all before them.

There was not another sound from an enemy, but gongs were heard in the distance unceasingly. I did not sleep, nor did I feel any inclination to do so; my double barrel lay across my legs the whole night, and as I sat on the sticks cross-wise, the hill behind was steep enough to form the back of a chair, against which I rested. Towards morning the wild jungle-hill sounds of insects echoed around us, and as the dew began to rise from off the earth, there was a cold raw feeling in the air. In an hour more we reached the summit of the hill, and found the enemy had retired to Rentap's house, which was situated on the brow, at the opposite end of this mountain. We had two more killed yesterday by the enemy's spears, and about ten wounded, and over a hundred rolled down

the declivity head over heels, leaving arms and ammunition strewed in all directions. The Iron Anchor maintained his position manfully, and well merited his name. He held fast, with his back against a tree, using his carbine on every opportunity; at other times he protected his body with a large shield, which was split in many places by the enemy's heavy wooden spears, showered against the leaders.

June 8th.—I advanced with the few who were around me, and saw the remains of the enemy's position the evening before; there had only been a few of them, and I heard subsequently, the chief fighting cock of Rentap, named Unsi, was shot through the heart, and the party retired late in the evening carrying his dead body to Rentap's abode. Now rain came on, hard and cold, and our force crouched under any shelter they could find, and lighted temporary fires to keep themselves warm; the cold and wet may have been disagreeable, but the smoke of their fires drove me nearly beside myself, and I was at last obliged to rush away half blinded and wild, the pain in my eyes being excruciating. How natives could sit quietly, I could never understand. When the rain ceased, we again advanced, and with only a few in front of me, I pushed on for what is called Lium's pathway, which I knew to be the key of the Saribus country. At the head of

this we called a halt. The force looked downcast and fatigued, but work was in store. Here we built langkans as usual, and arranged a strong covered platform on a tree which overlooked our surrounding habitations, and around the whole space we erected a strong stockade, commanding the path to Rentap's house, which was distant about 400 yards. In the afternoon the weather began to clear off, when our party cheered up a little, but natives suffer much from cold, and I found my langkan was no better than any of the others. The Dyaks took up their positions wherever they could find level ground, and the place looked more like a migratory encampment of Bedouins than an attacking force. In the evening I assembled the Dyak and Malay chiefs for a consultation, for the purpose of arranging future proceedings, and told them my wish was to leave the wounded with a strong body of armed Malays in charge of this point, and to go myself in charge of the remainder of the force to scour and lay waste the country of Saribus. However, my proposal was not acceded to, and the Dyak chiefs told me positively that they wished me to remain here, as they would not trust any native to take charge of such a position. They added, "If you advance further, we will return," so I was obliged to give in to their views. From the night of the seventh, to the fifteenth,

I lived on this spot, and the events that passed may thus be succinctly enumerated. An inspection of Rentap's fort proved it to be a house within a very formidable stockade impervious to rifle shots, with almost perpendicular declivities on two sides of it. When I was inspecting it on the afternoon of the second day, a loud commotion of yelling and firing of shots arose in my camp. On returning I found the enemy had made an attack on our rear, and evidently had been expecting that the whole of our force had advanced towards Rentap's fortification, leaving our rear unguarded. They soon retreated on meeting with a warm reception. A few spears were exchanged between the Dyaks, some of whom were slightly wounded; one fell over a precipice and did not return till next morning. A division of our Dyaks and Malays, headed by some chiefs, proceeded on the third day. Old Gassing held the Saráwak flag waving on a long pole, and I noticed all that passed with a telescope on the mount. The enemy were sitting on a hillock evidently holding a council of war. After remaining in that position half-an-hour, they arose and came down towards our force, which I could see wending its way slowly along a dell between two small hills, and then both parties were excluded from my view. Shots were fired and distant yells sounded.

Some time after I plainly recognised the enemy passing again over the hillock, as if in full retreat, and then our flag gradually ascended. Some hours after, we descried smoke in several places, and at sunset our force returned to the mountain, bringing news of several houses being burnt down. The padi was destroyed, few valuables were obtained, and by the marks, the female part of the community were known to have fled two days before. We had lost two more men, and had obtained two of the enemy's heads.

The next day our camp presented a busy appearance, but the weather was provokingly adverse; rain poured all night, only clearing up a few hours in the afternoon. The sound of cocks crowing and pigs squeaking in camp, gave some satisfaction. Each day parties went down and always brought up plunder of some kind, principally rubbish. I was in no hurry to move home, as if we did not gain some actual success, or remain long enough for the reinforcement of the enemy to go back to their homes, I was well aware, that our return march would be a difficult matter, as spears would be flying from every eminence.

I attempted to persuade our party to storm the fortress, and promised if three would lead the way, I would be the fourth to make the attack at night. This they would not listen to, and so we were obliged to

remain day after day in our muddy langkans, with roofs that were very far from keeping out rain; my flooring was at least four inches in soft mud. It rained almost incessantly, and on the first day I had adorned myself with the whole stock of my clothes, and had to keep them on the whole time I remained in this place. Tea and coffee were my great comforts, and the brandy bottle was getting low, but I only allowed myself one pull morning and evening. This was sufficient for health, for I never felt better or stronger. Numbers of the force were laid up with all kinds of complaints, of which, perhaps, the principal one was laziness.

When the weather cleared, we had a magnificent view of the country around, comprising many of the rivers as well as the sea; this is truly the grandfather, as the natives call it, of the surrounding hills.

The last day we had made up our minds to sally forth in force, against Rentap's fortifications, and the natives had some hope of taking it, but I had none, and as I was for storming, I left it to them to make preparations, and for three days a large party had been preparing moving and standing stockades; the former were for the purpose of conveying fire under a moveable protection, and when sufficient wood was collected, with a favourable wind, a blaze was to set it all in flames.

They deserve credit for working with a considerable degree of foresight under the most adverse and trying circumstances. A native's hands, during the coldest hours, could not grasp an instrument for carpentering purposes. The stockades were soon completed, and at mid-day when the rain ceased we congregated around the place. The path to the entrance of Rentap's fort was exceedingly narrow, with most precipitous sides. I took up my position with a rifle, and watched for movements among the enemy, but the active work I left to Aing, who, drawn sword in hand, superintended with much activity. The sounds were deafening, and the fellows carried the wood and materials under the fire of Rentap's guns. At 4 P.M. our party had gained within six or seven yards from the outer fort, and the scene was truly exciting. Our enemies evidently were not numerous, and kept as still as mice, saving the old gong, which never ceased. They threw stones from the inside, which fell on the heads of our fellows, and muskets were being used, together with a swivel taken from us at the time Lee was killed. At half-past five our leaders, crouching under the moving stockade, called for fire, and the wood collected was in considerable quantities. At this juncture Aing fell, wounded from a musket shot; then evening set in, and we were obliged to return to our

quarters. The enemy yelled in triumph at our failure. On examining Aing's wound, I found the shot had entered below his shoulder, and passed round to the back, where it could be felt distinctly. I recommended its being cut out, which his people instantly proceeded to do. He told me not to go near the enemy again, now that he was incapable of further work. Three or four more were wounded by shot, and some thirty to forty had received nasty blows from stones.

As I lay down to rest at night, after my last sip of brandy, I gave up all thoughts of gaining Rentap's fortress, but resolved to see what could be done in the morning. The greater number of people were out of provisions,—mine had been scant for the last three days; and my own covering was chiefly used by my poor half-chilled-to-death followers. Underneath was a perfect pool of mire, and I can safely say, for the whole eight days I never had a dry stitch of clothing; I never washed, or undressed, scarce even slept, but I had not so much as a finger ache, so firmly did my John Bull constitution resist the climate. When I rose the last morning, the enemy were yelling, and my first desire was to get about a hundred of the strongest young fellows together, command myself, and proceed to Attui, where there were three long houses of ene-

mies, about six hours' walk distant. This I promised to do in three days, when I would return here and march back with the whole force. I could obtain no volunteers; some said they were sick, others out of provisions, and I was obliged to bow to circumstances, and at eight o'clock our party began to descend the mountain. The wounded and sick were in the centre. I had charge of the rear, or tail, for not more than ten men were behind me, with an old Dyak chief, "Empaling," who never left my side the whole march back. The enemy were yelling at no great distance on either side of us. We passed down Rappu again, and I was surprised to find what a distance we had climbed when the blood was hot. We had to lower ourselves by holding on to the trees. At the foot of the mountain, on the other side of Penabun stream, there was a narrow gorge with exceedingly precipitous sides, and here I felt certain the enemy would molest us, so I had my double-barrel in order, and told my followers to look to their arms. We passed on, keeping our eyes on the alert on all sides, but we got through safe. We reached the house with the pretty lasses, but were in no condition to pay the promised visit, so making an excuse we went on.

I here received a letter from the Rajah, who was in Saribus, to say how anxious he was about us, but

expecting we should find our way overland home if we could not reach the boats. It was some time after five when we passed down the last steep which closed Sadok from our view. On arriving at our boats there was a most dreadful tale of disaster awaiting us: owing to the continued rain, a fresh had come down at night, about twelve feet high, had swept our stockade clean away, and the people had to run to the boats for their lives. Over seventy boats were missing, having gone heaven knows where; my own boat had lost all her covering, and had drifted, but was recovered; and now there were at least one thousand of our force boatless, standing disconsolately on the bank. The news was not encouraging, but I at once persuaded the unhappy-looking people to shake down the best way they could for that night, and in the morning we would do our best; at any rate we would not desert them. This had been the first fine day we had seen since starting for Sadok, and our fellows I found were not totally dispirited, but seemed to feel God was to be praised that they had arrived safe back so far. I enjoyed a bathe, and was fresh again. It was a lovely evening, without a cloud, and the stars were shining out on us with purest lustre. I rolled myself up in a quilted pianoforte cover; and after serious meditation upon our safe arrival, on past events, and future hopes for the

next day's labour, and with a sincere thankfulness to Him who ordaineth all things, I dropped off into sweet forgetfulness.

16*th*.—Morning came, and with it its troubles. The Dyaks were going with all speed to escape, having their boats filled with passengers. I was standing on a point, bellowing my lungs out, and pitching stones on those who sought to get past. My temper was sorely tried, and do what one could the boats could not take all in, so we set to work to make rafts, and by this means, after several hours, made a start; Aing's boat and mine were holding the rear, and allowing no one to remain behind us. It was really laughable to see some of the unfortunate Dyaks floating down the stream on logs and pieces of wood. Here and there we picked up boats, which were speedily set afloat, and the water in the river, fortunately neither too high nor too low, took us down at a great pace. At the first landing-place of friendly Dyaks, I despatched Taype, with 200 of our fellows, to find their way home overland, and at an early hour in the afternoon I called a halt for the night, as we had come across six of our lost boats, some hanging on the branches of trees, and some on hill tops. My boat was full to sinking, having forty-two men in her, and six hanging on astern, relieved by others every now and then. When

coming down in this forlorn manner, an old Banting Orang Kaya who was with me, and who with all his people had lost their boats, clothes, and everything, said "It is only the custom of mankind." They were not all, however, so philosophically disposed; and I heard more than once, that my bird this time had not been a properly selected one.

17*th*.—As morning dawned some arrows were blown at us,—we in return peppered the banks with shot, and proceeded again in better order than yesterday, as our fellows now had boats, such as they were. I heard of many people being drowned on the night on which the fresh came down, and we had passed two dead bodies by the river's side. One Malay as he was going down in a boat, sweeping along at a pace of twenty miles an hour, jumped out on seeing a Dyak trying to get up her sides, whom he took to be an enemy. The imprudent Malay was drowned. Another Malay told me he had come all the way down in a boat by himself, and never before felt so frightened in his life; he sat motionless all the time, repeating his prayers, as it was impossible to do any good; ten hours brought him to the cross boom in safety, having drifted more than 140 miles that night by the fresh alone. I could never learn how many poor fellows were drowned or boats lost that night, but the up

river Dyaks were well supplied with the latter for a year afterwards. Late in the evening we reached Sakarang fort, where all was well and smiling. The next day our force broke up, and dispersed to their different homes. I wished them good-bye, and they seemed happy, looking forward with a considerable degree of pleasure to the spreading of news among their different relations; for the narration of their adventures is a custom to which the natives are particularly partial. And now all the excitement, the quicksilver of my system, within twenty-four hours was down to zero, for I had no one to listen to my narration. The only thing for me was—

"To sit on rocks, to muse on flood and fell,
To gently watch the forest's shady scene."

CHAPTER VI.

Turtles—Their eggs—Trip—Cholera—Superstition—Saribus—Balla—Intended excursion—Defeat of ditto—Advance to Padeh—Burning of houses—Cholera—Building of fort—Fitze Cruickshank left in charge—Dyak decapitation—Fiendish proceeding—Reach Sakarang—Mode of life—Dyak interest—Saribus again—Startling reports—Attack—Loss of enemy—Mr. Watson's arrival—Meet Saribus Malays—Conference—My return—Preparations for another attack—Ascent of Saribus—Laborious work—Encounter—Death of Sadji—Good riddance—Further ascent—Our bivouac—Fortifications—Inland march—Steepness of mountains—Remarks on marching—Fatigue—Re-enter camp—Wounded Dyak—Start for Sadok—Mortar—Extreme heat—Ascent of mountain—Result of mortar firing—Our killed and wounded—The enemy's coolness and vaunt—Our failure and descent—Burial of dead—Reach boats—Downward journey—Sandom's advice—Result of expedition—Undercurrents—Remarks on the style of life—Agricultural intentions, &c.—Unforeseen occurrences—Disappointment.

March, 1858.—Early this year, before the sea of the north-east monsoon had abated, in company with two gentlemen I visited the island of Satang, and from thence went to Talang Talang, the resort of the egg-laying turtle. In the fine season the average number found on the beach at night varies from one hundred to one hundred and twenty, each laying about one hundred eggs. The people who live on these islands

watch them closely, and resort to absurd practices to entice them to lay—feasting, and decorating the sands with flags. After having done this, no strangers are allowed in the vicinity. Even a Hadji, who has charge of the place, makes use of these superstitious means. The watchers are obliged to remain awake all night, not only to see the turtle come up, but to mark the spot by a peg, directly the eggs have been laid, as the blind instinct or sagacity of the animal is surprisingly acute; and while scraping holes in half-a-dozen different places, she will lay her eggs in one only, and fill up the hole so as to evade the most diligent searchers. Some I have seen in daylight still on the sands, and the boys riding on their backs for amusement, while they propel their cumbrous bodies to the water. They are of a large size, and the eggs are valuable as an article of commerce, so much so, that the Government has prohibited the killing or catching the creatures. The natives are particularly fond of the eggs as an article of food: they are not disagreeable to the taste when mixed with curry, but when eaten without any condiments, possess a dry, sandy flavour, which somewhat resembles a stale fowl's-egg, but doubtless by the skill of a Soyer they would become very delicious.

This group of islands was formerly a favourite

resting-place for Lanun pirates before Saráwak was governed by the white Rajah; and since that time one encounter in a bay took place between the boats of the "Dido" and a fleet of piratical prahus, who fought determinedly for a length of time, but were ultimately taken and burnt. (*See Keppell's Work.*)

We proceeded to the coast, anchoring in a small stream named Samatan, and visited the people. The village we found to be a wretchedly tumble-down place, situated near to the foot of the grand mountain of Poe, which is the highest in the Saráwak territory, being 7000 feet above the level of the sea. People report that the ascent is gentle, and there is abundance of water on the top. A sanitarium placed on it would be of the greatest benefit to the Europeans, and we eagerly look forward to the time when it may be effected, for such a change would be almost equivalent to a trip to England. The base of this mountain occupies a considerable area, and the peaks are not so pointed or precipitous as most of the highlands of this country. After staying here two days, we visited my very favourite spot, Lundu, where I had first tried a Malay effusion, in an official capacity, on an aristocratic Pangeran. Lundu has been the schooling-place for many of the Europeans who afterwards were appointed to more important stations. The Dyaks

came aboard, and our decks were covered with them the greater part of the day and night. My friend Alderson gave them many of his experiences, which amused them excessively. One old man remarked, "The Tuan is very full of fun!" As I mentioned before, these fellows are fond of conversation, and never tire of hearing stories told of Europe. We visited their houses, and received many presents. They show every sign of being a happy tribe, and have reason to be thankful, for there are few things to make them otherwise than prosperous. The soil is excellent, and yields abundance of padi and other vegetable products. The jungles are well filled with articles suitable for commerce, such as rattans, hard-woods, gutta, dammar, fruit, and nibongs—the latter so useful for building their houses. The river is without bore, or any dangers, well supplied with fish, cool and refreshing, and fed from fine mountains in various directions. These mountains are covered with primitive jungles, and are easy of access, being clear of brushwood and undergrowth. Plenty of deer and pigs range over them, and are to be had for the hunting. The land is specially adapted for coffee and pepper plantations.

We took some small Chinese children on board, for the school in Saráwak—poor little creatures, mostly

unfortunates who had lost their parents in the attack on the Chinese after the insurrection, and now had been recovered from the Dyaks, who held them as captives.

We sailed for Saráwak, which we reached after three days, and I returned to Sakarang, where I found the cholera had been raging to an alarming extent, and many hundreds had been swept away by this epidemic. It attacked the Malays principally, who are the most ill-advised physicians, and appear generally to do just the reverse of what should be done. At this time they would not touch any wholesome food, particularly the flesh of fowls, or other such substantial nourishment, refusing to spill blood for fear of incurring the anger of spirits, but starved themselves and drank hot water, and this while in a healthy state. The result was, that when the disease did attack them, they were so low and weak as soon to sink and die, in spite of any medicine. The people lost all confidence in the Mahomedan faith, and resorted to the practice of feeding spirits, by making little fancy boats which they term "Jong"—and the inhabitants of each house were eager to subscribe their quota of food, sweetmeats, &c., to be placed in this bark, which was then set adrift with considerable ceremony, to float past all the houses, and go out to sea.

Some of the leading Mussulmans were very mortified at the superstition displayed by their flock, but I believe many of the Hadjis themselves trusted more to the propitiation of the spirits by such means than to their own prayers. This sad epidemic travelled steadily along the coast, and attacked each place with about equal severity.

April, 1858.—I had for many months been tormented by the affairs in Saribus, which had been for generations the hot-bed of head-hunting and piracy in every shape. The people were now—partly owing to the Chinese insurrection—becoming much more audacious, and I found it had been to no purpose holding communication with even the Malays, who a few days ago refused to receive a letter, and declared they intended shortly to ascend the river, and live with the Dyaks, and eat pork as they did. So it was evident a crisis was approaching which would require resolute action, or our *prestige* would be injured in this quarter. This we could by no means afford to lose, as stoppage of all trade and communication on the coast would inevitably ensue. Two Dyak friends (the likeness of one is in Mr. Spenser St. John's book), named Bakir and Ejau Umbul, came over from that river, and brought intelligence that a fleet of forty large Dyak boats were now ready on the Saribus side, commanded

by Lintong, and were only waiting for Sadji, whose boat was building at Paku, about forty miles from the mouth, but was not yet completed. Their intention was to go to sea, and take heads in any direction. After thinking over what was best to be done, I resolved to send an express-boat to Saráwak for reinforcements, and at once set to work to put my dilapidated flotilla into order. I was sadly in want of large boats, having only one fit for use. The Dyaks, I was well aware, would be ready directly, but their force could not be depended upon, except in an irregular fashion.

In three days the big boat was ready, with a 3-pounder in her bows, and sixty men aboard, well armed and provisioned, and we set off. On reaching Lingga, luck favoured us considerably, for here we found our small gunboat schooner, "Jolly Bachelor," commanded by John Channon, had just arrived, having brought some passengers for Banting. I now felt considerably relieved in my mind at having an extra force, which I detained for this important service.

After embarking, I started with a picked crew, and the numerous boats were following in our track. We entered Saribus unknown to all the population, the greater part of which were residing near the mouth. A boat, containing some of the head men, came alongside of us as we were passing up. Agitation was

strongly depicted on their countenances, and they whispered inquiries of some of the crew whether they were to be attacked as well as the Dyaks. I informed them that they might follow if they were inclined, but that I should ask nothing of them. A short distance higher up we anchored off another village, the chief of which was favourably disposed to us. He at once came on board, when I told him I had perfect confidence in him, and wished him to take charge of the vessel, to pilot her up past the dangerous shoals of the river. He looked anxious, but was evidently proud of being the individual singled out for this duty, and promised to do his best. He pointed to his son, a fine strapping youth of seventeen years, and begged me to make every use of him. Our party of boats assembled, numbering only one hundred as yet. At an early hour the next morning we weighed. The river was broad and deep, and the tide whirled us up at a sweeping pace. When we brought up below the point where the bore first rises, there was some danger of being ripped open by the cable as we swerved about in an eddy which swung us round and round, and heeled the vessel over considerably; then a back-water would take the bow, bringing it up with a jerk against the cable. We started again next morning, and soon came to the dangerous shoals; one touch on

them would have rolled us over like nine-pins. The tide was making about eight miles an hour, and we had a few boats towing, to give us steerage-way. At one time there was only one foot of water to spare under the keel, and then Channon's face looked sadly anxious; but the lead was useless at such a time, and the pilot must trust solely to his knowledge of the different sands and difficulties.

News was brought us that Sadji had abandoned his boat, and had retreated up the river, and the inhabitants higher up were preparing their wives and families for a retreat into the interior, leaving only the men to defend the houses and property. They had expected to find me in a small boat as usual, when they would have made an attack with their heavy force, but now, they said, I had come in a house, for so they styled our small pinnace.

We passed most dangerous places without an accident, and then anchored again for the night: the vessel ranged about to such a degree as to keep us awake the greater part of it. To my great disappointment, I found the cholera had followed us, and three boats' crews had already come alongside asking for medicine; two poor fellows in one boat had the complaint in the acutest form, and were suffering most excruciating pain from cramp. I administered an

almost never-failing remedy, "The Bishop of Labuan's Pill," and rubbed the men with Kaya putih oil; they were better before morning, and so were all those who could take these remedies in time; but, alas, many did not, and died ere the morning sun arose. We lifted anchor at sunrise, and a number of friendly Dyaks came on board, or followed close to us, dressed in their finest clothes.

All real dangers in the river were now passed. Hilly banks were on either side, and every here and there was a Dyak house, out of which women and children peeped, and pretty laughing girls in brightly coloured costumes waved their hands, and seemed rejoiced at seeing us, asking us to stop in their most coquettish manner. With a strong tide we swept past beautiful farming grounds heavily laden with padi, waving yellow and ripe in the morning sun; and at 9 A.M. anchored at the mouth of the Padeh river, which is narrow and shallow. There was no room for swinging, so we moored head and stern, and hauled our anchor up, and hung it on to the branch of a high fruit tree, to keep the chain from fouling with drift-wood. Luxuriant fruit trees were grouped around us on either side, that of the luscious durian being most plentiful, and very magnificent in size. There was great commotion among the inhabitants, who evidently had not made

up their minds what to do, whether to flee or stay; all our old-established enemies were far away, but there were many others who hovered half way. Some were trying to pass with goods and chattels in their boats; these I seized until matters were a little more settled, and shortly our vessel's store-room was full of valuable jars. A remark passed by a Malay somewhat surprised the owners; he told them that heretofore the Saribus had had a heaven all to themselves, different to all others, and now they would find out their mistake.

We housed in and collected arms on deck, and arranged a 6-pounder gun so as to point up the river, in case any of the enemy's forty boats made their appearance; the force was collecting for the whole day, and in the evening we held a consultation to decide future proceedings. It was arranged that a party should be organised to make an attack on the Padeh stream against Nanang and Sadji's houses, which were about half-a-day's walk away. I refused to go inland unless the expedition remained away for three days, and in the morning, as everything was well prepared, and I was ready equipped, a large number of the principal men came to beg me to remain, aboard or not,—at all events, to stay a night away; so I gave up the idea of going at all, but gave directions that a party of Malays and Dyaks should go and lay the country waste within

a day's march of where we then lay. In an hour they started, and we could see the line straggling far away in the distance before we lost sight of them in the jungles. The Ballau Dyaks were leading, as these were their old enemies, from whom they had suffered so much, and now was the time to avenge themselves. At mid-day they descried the roofs of the enemy's houses, and shortly afterwards the leaders were attacked by a volley of spears hurled from a hillock. Janting, with a son-in-law on each hand, advanced, followed by his people, and opposed the party with drawn swords; one of his sons cut down his man, decapitated him, and Janting himself had come in contact with another, when his other son-in-law fell with two spear wounds, and would have lost his head, if his father had not most opportunely dealt a terrific blow at his adversary, and then stood guard over his wounded relation, while the enemy had time to make off, fighting indiscriminately with our people. In this scrimmage many were wounded; the Saribus retreated, and knowing the country, were soon out of reach. There were no muskets on either side, and the Malays were far in the rear, and throughout the day evinced great fear, and did little service. An advance was then made upon the houses, which were found comparatively empty. They were gutted of the few things left in them, and

burnt. Our Dyaks strayed about, and on reaching another house they rushed in, and on some of them seizing a valuable jar, the rightful owner turned round and inquired "What they were about?" whereupon our party was attacked, and several of them killed for making this foolish mistake of thinking the inhabitants a part of their own force. However, the enemies were afterwards driven out, and their houses burnt, and our party returned victorious.

The Malays showed the most wholesome dread of these enemies, and on the previous day I had overheard one of the head men making inquiry, whether it would be possible to overcome such people as Saribus Dyaks, who had been victorious for so many generations? These Malays also were exceedingly divided as to whom they should ultimately follow—whether Dyak or white man; and were doubtful as to our sufficiently supporting and protecting them if they became really enemies of the Dyaks: however, I was now in a position to clinch their sincerity, being placed between them and the Dyak community, though if they had joined the latter they would doubtless have given us much trouble. I resolved not again to abandon this river, but to build a fort and permanently take possession in order to guard and establish some system of government, whereby inch by inch we might hold fast what

we gained, and so prevent all our work from being undone by Malay rascality. In the afternoon I went ashore to choose a spot for building the fort, and cleared a large patch of ground well adapted for offensive and defensive operations, commanding the river for several miles up the reaches, and with a picturesque view on all sides.

While taking notes of this locality, a tumult arose below, which brought about silence among us; we descended to the banks of the river in all haste, scrambling through the brushwood as best we could. On reaching our force I found our Dyaks were fighting among themselves, and disputing over the head of an enemy. They were making a fearful commotion, the boats drifting across each other, and men standing with drawn swords in their hands. I saw there was little time to lose, so rushed down the mud bank to the dingy, and shoved into the midst of this promiscuous mêlée. Janting was the leader, vociferating in true Dyak fashion with the utmost exasperation. His temper was hot enough to drive him to commit any mischief when once aroused. I closed with his boat, placed my hand on his shoulder, spoke a few quiet words, asking him not to cast disgrace on the whole of the force by fighting with his own friends. He at once silently slunk inside his boat, the sounds died away, and peace

was restored; but such rows are exceedingly dangerous and unpleasant. No Malay attempted to interfere, and it was only by knowing the man that I was able to succeed without resorting to severity, when one drop of blood might have led I don't know where.

I returned to the Jolly covered with mud, and after bathing in the cool stream, found Janting sitting on deck weeping like a child. He apologised for his bad behaviour, and begged to be forgiven, alleging as an excuse the excitement of the morning's encounter with the enemy, and his son-in-law's wounds; people wished, he said, to seize his property, and he defended it. I dressed the wounded man, who was in no danger; he had one job from a spear in his groin, and another through his arm, and was in much pain, but the healing powers of a native's constitution are surprising. The next morning I found our force was breaking up to return home; the cholera had attacked them very severely during the night, and several had died within a few hours. One poor fellow, whom I had known for years, called at midnight for medicine, and finding me asleep, the watchman refused to arouse me. He was dead before daylight. The Dyaks expressed their regret at being obliged to leave, but go they must. We held a consultation among the Malays about building the fort, and they unanimously recommended it to be

erected further down, as here, they said, it would be next to impossible to find supplies. After weighing the pros and cons I yielded, and followed their advice, so we dropped down a few reaches into more open water. The Dyak enemies were hovering about astern of us, and some yelled and flourished their swords. The Saribus Malays proceeded to cut wood, which they were to bring for the building of the new fort. The cholera was playing sad havoc among them; they complained but little, though their faces told their misery. Fortunately the Jolly's crew had passed through their ordeal in Saráwak, and were not further molested.

The reinforcements now arrived from Saráwak in charge of Fitze Cruickshank. They were very late in coming, and no further active operations were in contemplation at present. We beached the pinnace on the bank, and monotonously awaited the wood. Old Abang Boyong had been the active working man, and was inclined to favour the Dyak cause, offering peace and reconciliation. His wish was that they should be persuaded to pay a small fine, and be received on friendly terms; but my opinion was, that they were far too strong to wish to submit. I, however, permitted Abang Boyong to do his utmost with overtures, and he had appointed an interview with the enemy at the

mouth of the Padeh. On the evening of the day that the meeting was to have been held, Boyong came to me with an anxious face, and in a few words told me he had been to the spot appointed, and never had such a narrow escape of his life before. As he was speaking with two or three fellows on the ground, Sadji's party assembled in numbers, and armed, and hid themselves in the brushwood. A few minutes more, and he would have been taken captive or killed, but fortunately spying Sadji's red jacket in the distance, he had time to make off in his boat beyond their reach. He confessed he had been shamefully deceived by their artful designs, and his subdued tone had a quiet anger about it. He begged me to follow them up, if possible, or at any rate make some demonstration to disperse them.

Before the assembled chiefs in the evening we decided the way of procedure, and all were favourable except a patriarchal Hadji from Saráwak, who emphatically exclaimed, "Remember, Tuan, whatever else occurs, do not let us have any fighting!" At an early hour on the following morning we set off in boats only, and, with a strong flood-tide, floated up the Padeh stream without making a sound. The bowsman and steersman only kept the boat in her proper position; the remainder of the crew, with their muskets, were

all in readiness. Boyong was in front, and the stream was so small as only to permit one boat at a time to pass on. At last, on rounding a point, our enemies were seen sitting near the bank, and the leaders fired a volley, which was followed by a very indiscriminate blazing of musketry. Our boats became crowded together, and great confusion and noise ensued. I felt in a perilous position, and thought that every moment some of our people would shoot each other. As for an enemy, none but the leading boats saw one. Some of them rushed ashore, but soon returned. None of our party had been wounded, and our enemies were dispersed. We immediately retired, or we should have been unable to move at low water. We dropped back stern first, in the same quiet way as we had advanced.

This short trip plainly proved to me that great risk is attached to a Malay force, unless accompanied by Dyaks; for the latter act as a look-out, and are able to cope with Dyaks in jungles, where the Malays are next to useless unless they happen to have been born and bred among Dyaks.

The delay and the sickness caused the time to pass in the most irksome manner, and my condition was weak and wretched, and was made worse by living in this small cabin of the gunboat, in which one can only sit upright. I seldom passed a night without an alarm

of some kind or other, and my nervous system was shaky from confinement. One night I jumped up in a dream, and pointed my rifle at a friendly boat, but awoke just in time to see my error; so, for a change, I left Fitze and John Channon in charge, and set off myself overland for Sakarang. It was a most fatiguing walk, without any regular path, and the greater part of the way over very steep hills, or through miry swamps, the latter knee-deep. The distance was about twelve miles, with a crooked road, and while progressing I thought that no persuasion or pecuniary reward could induce me to attempt such an experiment again. It did not cease raining the whole way, and on reaching Sakarang I was glad to find the cellar not quite empty; a bottle of sherry somewhat restored the inner and outer man.

I made the most of my one day's holiday, but had engaged to return the following day, so we trudged back again, and this time I did not feel the fatigue. I was much the better for this spurt, and had restored my nerves by the rough walking.

We now went to work at the defence, consisting of a single-roofed house planked all round, having a small aperture for an entrance, with a long notched pole suspended to answer the purpose of a ladder. This was pulled up at night, and, with ports closed, there

was no opening left to admit an enemy. Four three-pounder guns were mounted in the upper story. It was soon completed, with a large space around cleared of jungle and brushwood, to prevent dangers arising from an enemy prowling about with fire or sword in the vicinity of the building. The house of a good old Dyak stood near, and his party were always ready when needed. My friend and pilot, Abang Dondang, removed his people, to take up their abode close to the fort, mustering about 130 fighting Malays. I despatched the pinnace back to Saráwak, and after seeing the place sufficiently secure, placed Fitze Cruickshank in charge of the station. He was young, but strong and plucky, with an abundance of Scotch prudence and plain common sense. After giving him the necessary instructions, I left in a small boat, and when near the mouth met two Dyak boats, one of which was towing a sampan. On my reaching Lingga the next day, I received intelligence that a party of Dyaks had been near the mouth of the Lingga, had met one boat, which they stopped with the offer to sell sirih leaf. When near, the crew drew their parangs (swords), cut down one woman, whose head they obtained, and took the daughter prisoner. The father jumped overboard in time to save his life.

These were the Dyaks we passed in Saribus river,

with the captive and head aboard their boat. I deplored at the time the escape of the rascals, the head of whom was our enemy, Sadji; but subsequently have had reason to be satisfied that we passed the enemy untouched. I was afterwards told that when Sadji saw our boats he sat with his drawn sword on the captive's throat, ready to cut off her head if she had spoken, or we had taken notice of them. They would then have gone on shore with both heads, and found their way overland to their haunts, and we should not have been able to follow in the strange jungles. This act of Sadji's was the most barefaced that had been committed for several years, and it was evidently necessary for us to take every precaution, as the fight was to be a hard one.

I returned to Sakarang, where everything looked homely and nice; as it had ever been my particular care to keep my abode in apple-pie order, and not to lose all habits of civilisation and neatness. My hall of audience was capable of holding six hundred men. Along it were arranged the arms between the wooden posts, with chairs and tables at each end. Occasionally, when lonely, I used to invite natives to see the magic lantern, and, with a musical box and some dancers, an evening could be passed with moderate pleasure. The sword-dance is excessively un-

graceful and uninteresting; a stiff mode of pirouetting round and round is the general figure, which would be perfectly useless in actual sword-play. Such displays did not often, however, take place; and one's life is particularly monotonous, books alone keeping the mind from flagging and becoming unhinged. My garden afforded me the next greatest occupation, and plates full of flowers were daily brought in and set on the different tables in the apartments, wafting a delicious perfume of these strong Eastern scented jessamines (chimpakas) through them.

The natives have no idea of the evil reported to arise from such perfumes at night, for it is their favourite practice to cover their pillows with opening blossoms, which are left till they are quite faded. Most of these flowers open after sunset, and fade soon after sunrise, unless they are plucked and kept in a cool shady room. My cattle afforded me much interest, and they were thriving well and multiplying fast. But the chief charm which kept me from sinking to the depths of despair, was my interest in the Dyaks.

I remained anxious about Saribus, but had great confidence in Fitze's management, and a gentleman was expected shortly to reinforce him. However, I felt the danger was not to be apprehended from our

open enemies, the Dyaks, but from the Malays, who were with their tongue friendly, though in their hearts sworn and bitter enemies. My object was—and I must confess I had little choice—to keep matters *in statu quo* until we were again in a position to prosecute active operations. The Dyaks frequently threatened to attack the Saribus fort, and shots were occasionally exchanged, but they always retreated after a few yells. At such a time the Europeans could not move from their doors without having armed followers around, as behind any shrub or bush there might be a lurking foe.

At this period a report reached me at Sakarang that a party of Dyaks had left Saribus, fully armed. Their destination was unknown. They were acting against the most distinct regulations which I had imposed among the inhabitants of Saribus, namely, that all Dyak parties living in that river were to carry a Malay pilot, to ensure them a safe-conduct along the coast; those without any on board would be treated as enemies.

On receiving this news, I directed the Banting chiefs to meet these Dyaks in force, and attack them unless they carried the necessary pilot. Two days after this, intelligence was brought that the enemy had lost fourteen men, and on the part of the Bantings

only a few were wounded. The latter had been lying in ambush in the Siludam stream, and had surprised the enemy's force, which was commanded by Lingir. I did not pity the unfortunates, as they deserved their fate, and would have dealt harder blows to innocent women and children if they had only advanced another day. Their chief's, Lingir's, boat was swamped, and he was only saved by being pulled into another by the hair of his head. He lost all his arms and charms—the latter much valued, and only carried when head-hunting is their object.

On the evening after I arrived at Lingga, and while Mr. —— and I were relaxing ourselves with a social conversation after dinner, a Nakodah made his appearance from Sakarang, and told us he had heard the Saribus fort was captured by the enemy, and all the arms, ammunition, &c. in their possession. I made further inquiries as to the particulars of such a proceeding, and was glad to find his account was not authenticated clearly; but it somewhat stunned me, although false reports ran rife daily, and inventions took place in extraordinary and marvellous shapes and degrees. My thoughts were directed towards Fitze, and I should have blamed myself for leaving so young a lad at such a post if anything had occurred to him. Mr. —— was exceedingly anxious, and he

earnestly expressed his opinion that, unless the strongest measures were taken, and punishment dealt, the country would be lost to Saráwak rule. The time for mercy had passed, and nothing but the severest lesson could restore matters in the vicinity of Saribus.

I retired to bed full of cares, and that night saw my arms loaded and primed with extra precaution. In the morning I made more inquiries of different parties, and the report seemed to want confirmation. At mid-day further news was brought me that three Paku Dyaks had been killed on the coast between this and Saráwak, and shortly afterwards a boat arrived, saying a man had been cut off only a few miles from us. So now I made preparations to start, expecting to hear more serious details if some prompt course were not taken. A large Dyak boat was equipped and manned by Malays, and with a following of Banting Dyaks, I set forth for the mouth of Saribus to intercept any of these marauders. In the course of three hours we had sped on our way some twenty-five miles. At night we pushed on again, and crept into the small streams as we advanced. While waiting in one of them in the Saribus, we descried a light making for us. Our reconnoitring party of two swift boats came in and reported a large boat proceeding up the river. We put out to close with this vessel, although I was well

aware that it advanced too openly to contain any foe. On approaching, I found it to contain Mr. Watson, on his way to Saribus fort. It was most fortunate he had not fired into our wild and warlike-looking force. I found him fully armed, with lighted match ready at the loaded guns on her top sides, and must confess I was delighted to see him for many reasons; first and foremost, for the reinforcement of our establishment at the Saribus fort, thereby lightening my responsibility in that quarter.

On approaching the Malay village in the morning we found them with their guns loaded, and the savage old chief swore before others that he would not have armed Banting Dyaks hovering about the vicinity of his possessions. A few moments after he said this he came to me and asked if I felt disposed to dirty my feet by entering his house. I now felt myself stronger, and determined to speak plainly to the Malays, who had fairly run the length of their tether, and were silently supporting and inciting every Dyak head-hunting expedition. We all assembled in the chief's house, and my following and his numbered about the same. In a longish oration I warned these Malays that in future I should hold them responsible for any of the Dyak enemies making their appearance past their village; if it happened again, they would be

liable to suffer, as I should also permit parties of my Dyaks to scour the Saribus waters at their pleasure; that I did not desire to interfere with them, further than requiring them to follow a system of government that would not prove detrimental to all our trading communities on the coast. To prevent mistakes (and those rascals are always apt to make a joke of what passes, or place their own construction upon my words), I called four principal leaders to be witnesses of what had taken place, and to exonerate me in case severe measures were taken after this warning. I also called for two respectable Saribus men to take up their abode in Sakarang, for the purpose of becoming witnesses in any business relating to their country, with which they could communicate in all matters of importance. Silence followed, but none murmured, and all their countenances bore an expression of alarm. A few words more passed, and then I bid them adieu in a friendly way. The old chief quietly followed me to the landing-place, and saw me shove off with my thirty boats. We returned to Lingga, and Watson proceeded to the fort up the river. On again reaching Sakarang we began to prepare for a forthcoming expedition to make an attack on the interior of Saribus. The inhabitants of the whole coast were to be armed and assembled for this

inland invasion. We had much trouble from the difficulty there was in finding boats adapted for this work. Large sized ones were perfectly useless, and heavy small ones would cause too much hard and trying labour in pulling over the gravelly beds and rapids. At length, after many delays, the Saráwak force, accompanied by thousands from the coast, started, and on the second day reached the point of rendezvous at the mouth of the Saribus, at which I arrived just after they had proceeded up the river; but here I was delayed waiting for my force, which I could not urge to move before their padi planting was safe. I was exceedingly vexed at this delay, but it was partly excused by the Dyaks having been out so many times already on the previous expeditions. They were somewhat tired of the frequent calls made upon them. After three days I went on with only forty boats, and on reaching Saribus fort I found Mr. Watson kindly awaiting my arrival. The remainder of the force had gone on several days before. We only spent one night here, and started before daylight in the morning, immediately after the bore had passed. Our people having brought one large and heavy boat, our progress was retarded, and the work was laborious. Early on the second day we saw trees that had been felled thickly across the stream to impede our pro-

gress, and the cutting down was carried on by the enemy while our leading party were clearing away to make a passage for their boats. This was no easy task, and bitterly did I blame my Dyaks for having kept me so much in the background as to prevent my assisting in this arduous work. The Tuan Besar* of Saráwak commanded the expedition, and was accompanied by other Europeans in the leading division. They found some of the trees were eleven and twelve feet in circumference, and had fallen over the narrowest parts of the stream, which was to all appearance hopelessly closed for some miles by this heap of wood. The axes and parangs, however, after very severe labour, opened a way, and then our leaders got past these impediments, and the enemy retired up the river, finding such hindrances to be of little avail. My party had only the trouble of pulling through the passage which had already been made. I resolved to leave the large boat on the second day. The crew dispersed among the remainder of the force, and afterwards we advanced at a much greater pace, and arrived that night about half way between Saribus fort and our destination. Watson and myself lived together, each offering our quota towards the feeding.

* Mr. Brooke Brooke.

I was in remarkably light marching order, and he had kindly collected much stock for the party of whites.

On the third day we passed a steep hill about 800 feet in height, rising perpendicular from the banks of the river. I learnt afterwards that the enemy had been holding the top of this elevation, and were prepared to shower stones into the boats as they passed; but the leaders obtaining some knowledge of this dangerous point, had wisely prepared a force to march overland and mount the hill on the land side before the boats advanced. This had the desired effect, as the enemy, on seeing a party closing on them, made off, and left the passage without danger. We were now close on the rear of the leaders, who were legion, and their din and murmuring were audible for many miles, like an immense swarm of bees. Our position was not an enviable one, although we had escaped the hard work. The water was fouled the whole way up, and instead of the beautiful clear stream running over gravelly beds, it was now quite undrinkable, and the effluvia of the thousands leading was far from agreeable. The fourth morning we spoke the rearmost of the leaders, and they reported the enemy not to be far distant. I waited, not intending to join the leaders before they had stopped for the night; but afterwards finding they advanced so slowly, my patience was

exhausted, so I pushed on with a few men in a small sampan, not wishing to be known in passing the hundreds of boats. While proceeding, a commotion arose, with cheers and yells from the leading party, and as I advanced the row increased; tales of prodigious deeds and Sadji's name were resounding on all sides in this bedlam. At least fifty had already declared they had killed him with their own hands. Two hours or more elapsed before quiet was restored. Orders were given to bivouac for the night. The boats were in dense masses for reaches down the river, and extended far above this spot. This was the mouth of Langit (sky) river. In the afternoon the force set to work to strengthen the position by throwing up palings around. The boats were rendered safe from any sudden night surprises; each party watched abreast their own boat.

Sadji was no more. He had met our leaders at the landing-place of his father-in-law, and gallantly attacked them, after having been upbraided by the inhabitants as the cause of this force coming into their country. Only one man was killed, by his side; the remainder made off too fast for the Malays to pursue, and our Dyaks were yet in the rear, or many more would have shared a similar fate. But enough had been done on this spot, as Sadji was dead—a good

riddance for all parties, for he had given a deal of trouble, and, without being a very brave man, was a determined enemy as well as an active and dangerous one,—always on the alert for head-taking; nothing was too high or too low for his bag. His father, Orang Kaya Bayang, who only died a few years ago, had maintained a surprising influence over both Dyak and Malay; the latter always following his counsel for the settlement of their more difficult and intricate cases. Sadji's name and acts had been in my ears and dreams for years past. Many a bloody deed had he perpetrated, and always had boasted that white man's powder and shot would take no effect on his body.

As I strolled on the large pebbly bed, listening to the few chatterers still awake, and the bubbling of the waters, I could not keep my thoughts from the man whom I had often met and shaken by the hand—of the chequered life he must have lived from infancy; and now his head was undergoing the process of cooking in some Dyak cauldron, or being baked over the fire, after having been examined by thousands, to be taken back for the occasion of a grand holiday! The game he had so often played with poor innocent people, who had never dreamt of committing such atrocities, was to be retaliated on himself. How were these really barbarous customs to be accounted

for, except as being the result of practices which had arisen, perhaps unavoidably by some trifling circumstance in the first instance, to be imperceptibly increased and perpetuated into an inveterate habit—a second nature, felt and relished alike by man and woman? But let us condemn no man or custom, for they are unaccountable enigmas. Priests may preach, enthusiasts cant, women wail, and peacemakers palaver, yet evidence favours the fact, that the sword alone clears the path for the scythe and the sickle.

We remained here one night, and at 2 p.m. there was a beautiful eclipse of the moon. The people awoke, and began howling at it, evidently disapproving this irregularity in nature, as it appeared to them. They no doubt attached some extraordinary fatality to it—at least all those who had not been warned of its appearanee. Fortunately, success had attended us, so there was no danger of evil consequences.

At a meeting I had held before leaving Lingga, I gave out publicly that this event would take place, so they were not surprised. It is almost necessary to attend to the Almanack, to be prepared against any alarm arising from such occurrences, which with an ignorant race inevitably produce panics. An old Malay gentleman told me, only a short time previous to this event, that on one afternoon he had seen two

suns. He declared he had never witnessed anything of the sort before, and accounted for it by the wonderful occurrences that were now taking place. This was from a man of rank and calling, who was a remarkably clever fellow, but old, and thought the world was going round the wrong way since his days were numbered with the yellow leaves.

We commenced work early the next morning, strengthening the position, at which a large part of the force was to remain. There were numbers sick already, and many disinclined to proceed further; indeed, they would have been quite useless had they done so.

We advanced at 10 A.M. The river was very low, and the crews had continually to jump out and pull the boats along. Many walked by the banks and along the bed of the river. The morning was cool, and the shade from overhanging branches prevented the sun's rays appearing. There were tumble-down houses and sheds all along the banks, which evidently had been run up to offer shelter to those who had fled from the lower country the previous year. The smoke of these dwellings ascended in wreaths, and afforded a bright blaze for a few moments. We reached Nangatiga, our destination, late in the afternoon. At this point there are entrances to three rivers—one leading

to Sadok, one towards the head of Kanowit, and the main stream running into the interior. A place could not be better chosen for the basis of operations, and a temporary and safe abode for our force. The tent of our Commander-in-chief was erected, and the remainder made small huts with the coverings off the boats. All preferred living ashore to the boats, fearing freshes suddenly coming down, and rolling them over. The streams above this point were only navigable for the smallest canoes. A paling was run up around the encampment, and on the different elevated spots small towers were erected, with watchers appointed to guard the multitude.

Our Dyak force soon departed to destroy the houses in the vicinity, and proceeded, as is their wont, to plunder right and left, but returned into camp at night. The second day of our arrival here, further stockades were made, to secure our position, and the place presented a very curious appearance. I made inquiry about all the particulars necessary for our inland excursion, to make an attack on the Dyaks between these waters and those running into the Rejang district; also finding out the style of paths, what mountains we should have to pass, the relative distances, places to bivouac, and the names of countries. We prepared provisions for four days, and

otherwise arranged our accoutrements. Messrs. Cruickshank, Fox, and Steele were to accompany me, and we should have about 200 Malays and perhaps 2000 Dyaks. We set off the next morning before seven o'clock, tracking up the Penebak stream for about two miles. After getting well clear of camp, and out of the water-path, we called a halt, to breakfast and arrange our force better. I managed so that the leaders of each country should have their own people about them. In case of any sudden attack taking place, they could rely on each other. Steele and Fox took charge of the rear division, Fitz and myself marched in the leading one, being preceded by about a hundred Malays. We passed, during the first hour's march, many houses that had been burnt, principally by the enemy, who in most cases adopted this Russian mode after defence was given up.

The first ascent was over the crown of a hill named Tabalau, about 340 feet high. The sun was almost overpowering, without a branch to shade us, as the ground had been just divested of every tree for farming. Many of our party were stopping and crouching under temporary shelter for their heads, and were suffering from thirst. We trudged on to the top without halting, and there stopped to rest and look around. The scenery was extensive, and we plainly

saw the mountain of Sadok in the opposite direction to which we had come; and the whole country, so far as the eye could reach, was a succession of hills and mountains, as steep as this one had been. We then descended, and the sun was now secluded from view behind the mount at our backs; the road was excessively slippery, on account of the number of feet passing over it. Fitz, who followed me, I certainly thought would have been injured, as he came down several times, but he was evidently accustomed to be well shaken. Early in the day I cautioned him against touching a black stone in the bed of a river, but his desire for experience overcame his sense of obedience, so he stept on it and went head over heels, very nearly bringing me down with him. Some part of the way led over batangs at the foot of the mountain, and these logs always form the most dangerous walking for European legs and nerves. We passed one thirty feet in length, and perhaps a foot and a half in breadth, leading over a gully with a rocky stream several fathoms underneath. I passed cautiously over, following close on the steps of my leader, but my next companion preferred sliding down the bank on his posterior, and clambering up the other side: this caused a break in the Balla of several yards, which we had to make up in double quick time. Such a march

over very broken ground is either done in extremely slow time, or treble quick,—either creeping or racing. We waded through slippery-bedded streams, and at 3 P.M. halted on the bank of one, which had recent traces of inhabitants. When clearing places for our night abode, many found some property concealed among long grass and under trees. These places for resting may, with a little trouble, be made tolerably comfortable; and provided the land be level, might be arranged as barracks. Each party or boat's crew's house under the same roof; a fire-place is made in front, and a large heap of wood set on the top for drying during the night.

The scene on a fine evening is one of much bustle and business; most have some kind of work to do after halting, in drying and mending clothes, repairing slings or the things carried, or cleaning and sharpening arms, and, most indispensable of all, cooking, which never takes place before dusk. Our roofing is constructed with green leaves arranged on the top of each other, so as to prevent the water entering,—but the Dyaks are the only people who take the trouble to look after such an important business with its due degree of attention. Malays prefer lesser work, with the chance of having no rain. Our flag is hoisted, and at night it makes a useful covering. Dyaks are in the

habit of making themselves comfortable in jungles, through which they so often roam and travel; portable coverings, and small mats a foot broad, are attached to their waists, hanging over their seats,—thus being provided with a clean mat always ready.; they are often ornamented with borders of yellow beads, and I have often thought of adopting this piece of Dyak furniture, as it has the advantage of keeping one dry and clean when reclining on these wet lands. Fortunately, in these countries we have no precautions to take against wild animals,—snakes, ants, centipedes, and scorpions, being the most formidable.

After dinner a few natives came and sat with us, and among them was a man belonging to the Rejang district, named Tani, who was an inveterate talker and an immoderate bore; a fine fellow, physically speaking, showing great power of limb. He stood 5 ft. 7½ in., with gigantic shoulders and depth of chest, with a cast of countenance somewhat resembling the Red Indian. His dress was a strange mixture of colours, and even absurd among Dyaks, but this man was of the Malanau race; his skull-cap of many hues had long feathers standing upright from it; a maias (orang utan) skin jacket hung over his shoulders. He was further adorned with feathers both before and behind, and sundry strings of beads hung dangling about. A breast-plate of tin,

with the edges slightly carved and perforated with holes, was attached to the jacket; his under garment consisted of a red cloth, and his legs were free of any incumbrances. The ends of the red cloth were long, and prettily embroidered with beads; the short sword of his country, with the convex and concave blade, hung at his waist, and human hair, stained various colours, fastened to the hilt, the belt being composed of beads. He was considered a most prodigious striker with this weapon, and I have heard men declare that they have witnessed him sever at a blow, a hardish piece of wood as large as the leg of an ordinary sized man. He was a clever and active fellow, and would dance and caper with his drawn sword on every imaginable occasion; but insincerity was written on his features, and when he spoke there were always a few drops of blood in my veins that appeared to curdle; the exact why or wherefore I cannot explain, but it is unaccountably so with some who are born under malignant stars. He conversed sometimes in Dyak, sometimes in good Malay, then again in the Brunei dialect, and various other languages, all with a like fluency and facility; he kept me sitting up much longer than I wished, and I was now delighted to hear his farewell. Fitz snored by my side, and I soon joined in chorus. There was no regular watch kept,

but several were awake among the force, and each time I opened my eyes during the night I heard a low conversation going on, principally among the old men. I had little apprehension of meeting any dangerous enemy, they being too busily employed in removing their families to a distance. My object was to burn and destroy, and take any stockaded defences we might happen to meet; any massacre of women and children was to be strictly guarded against. Such an enemy as ourselves, marching through the heart of the inhabitants' country, disregarding distances and obstacles, for the first time probably since Dyaks were Dyaks, would prove a sufficient demonstration, and, it was to be hoped, lead them to dread making any further seaward piracies or head-hunting depredations on the coast.

The next morning we advanced in the direction of Matai, a branch of one of the tributaries of Rejang. After three hours I considered we had proceeded far enough in that direction, so turned the force and directed the leaders to go in the direction of the head of Kajulau. Early in the afternoon we crossed a high and steep mountain, only a little lower than the one of yesterday, named Tabalau Indu (woman); the climb was again severe, and the heat excessive, step after step seemed to be the last that could be sped, and Fitz's voice, only just audible, begged for rest. We

reached the top, and there rested with satisfaction. Poor —— suffered severely, and lay on his back, while some of his followers went in search of the traveller's friend, a root which is to be found in abundance in this country, and when cut quickly emits a fresh cool draught of water, with only a slight flavour of wood. It is a great mistake to drink, as once having done so you require more, and in time it produces what the natives call "ikak," an unpleasant tightness in the chest, and difficulty in breathing.

We then descended and walked for some hours, until reaching a house, which was defended for a short time by the enemy; however, before we arrived they had made off. I refused to enter the house, which was crowded with our people, making great noise and confusion. I have preferred bivouacking on the ground since the dangerous occurrence in Kajulau, which so nearly proved fatal to an expedition. Our huts were huddled together, as the land was not well adapted for holding a large force; but it was only for one night, and so mattered little. We were all tired, and required few comforts,—our meal was scanty,—and then we slept, dreaming of hills, everlasting hills, higher and higher until we seemed approaching heaven, and then were obliged to descend by a circuitous path until we were wrapped in darkness and

moisture. After some hours trying to unravel such mysteries, I awoke cold and stiff.

The third day we marched from morning till late in the afternoon, and were now on the head of the Kajulau stream. There were large black rocks in bars from one side to the other, with only small interstices for the stream to pass over; deep dark pools were between the rocks; the jungle trees hung slanting over the river until the branches nearly met; and from either bank, cruelly steep hills rose, the only ground that was at all level being the bed of the river. This we followed as much as we could, but it wound too circuitously sometimes, and then we had to cross a steep hill to cut off a point, entering the stream again on the upper side. The formation was limestone, and there was much sand in some of the bays. Late in the afternoon three houses were burnt down, and the force obtained some plunder. We erected our sleeping abodes just before 5 P.M., which gave us time to bathe and rest before dinner time. Our sheds were crazy affairs, and an unpleasant opening was at my right capable of admitting an enemy without an obstacle; I called some of my men to take the important though disagreeable position. My youth, Bagus, immediately ensconced himself at the post of danger, and informed me he never slept on such occasions, so

telling him to see to his arms, and call me if he heard any rustling in the bush, I laid down; but long ere I had closed a lid Bagus was snoring, and edging his cold limbs close up to my covering. The rain poured all night; our roof leaked, and we rose in the morning wet through and stiff, and glad to see the light. The greatest boon in such a state, if health is strong, is to plunge into the cold stream for a couple of minutes, then with a warm rub of a rough towel the circulation is revived.

This was to be our last day's march. We commenced it by wading up the Mapi stream. The guides were of different opinions about our best and nearest line of march, but Sandom soon settled the question; and as we advanced, the scenery, under more sprightly circumstances, would have been strikingly picturesque, but poetical visions require to be accompanied by ease and comfort, and fancy declines building beautiful castles on an empty stomach. Once we climbed a cascade at the head of the stream, threading our way through a narrow passage between two ridges of rocks, with gushing falls and spouts every here and there. This rocky pathway was exceedingly slippery and unpleasant walking. Vegetation hung in festoons from off these rocky steeps, and many of the creepers were in full bloom. After reaching the open again we

rested, while a division of the force clambered a hill to examine a long house, which they found had been deserted for some days; it was in flames in a few minutes. We proceeded over hill after hill on the top of a ridge under a burning sun, without any shelter. This was the Rabbi and Telangkang range, running parallel to the Saribus river. Its ups and downs of about 200 feet proved trying work for our muscles, walking fast as we did. I must mention a peculiarity, which no doubt other travellers have experienced in like situations. After walking far, and becoming too tired to converse or take an active interest in surrounding objects, the mind becomes surprisingly active as the physical powers decrease in strength; irregular and disjointed thoughts run wildly one over another, as one sometimes finds in the moments of awakening from sleep. It was once my lot to attend the bed of a sick man dying from dysentery, and never can I forget the words that escaped from him a short while before he breathed his last. He rambled on in the wildest manner, mixing one subject with another, speaking of things he could scarcely ever have thought about, or even heard of, during his lifetime. In extreme fatigue I have known my mind to wander in a similar degree. When once in low condition, after having marched for some days,

my mental faculty continued to harp on "Move on, Jo." I cannot express my peculiar feelings about this sad character in "Bleak House," while picturing him in every distressing phase.

We descended to a stream, after walking for near four hours over hills, and here rested and fed, when I divested myself of my jacket and arms. My companions arrived, and poor Fox was very exhausted. He dashed into the cool rivulet, exclaiming, "It was enough to kill anybody." He was stouter than any of us, and consequently felt the hard and melting work in a greater degree. But a few of such marches soon robs one of all superfluous flesh. We stayed here an hour, and then two hours of fast walking brought us to Nanga tiga, where we joined our main force. I don't think I am inclined to exaggerate distances in jungle travelling, nor do I calculate a day's march in a straight line as the crow flies, but by guessing the pace, and knowing the number of hours on the move. Over anything like moderately good paths three miles can be done, seldom four, unless one is walking alone; then even two miles over a rugged steep path is more than equal, in point of fatigue, to three or four miles over better ground. This last and fourth day's march we could not have passed over less than fifteen miles as a crow would fly. We have made a circuit during

the four days of thirty miles, and the distance gone each day in walking couldn't have been less than thirteen miles.* This evening we were better satisfied with dinner, and pleased by the sound of more European voices. Some of the enemy had quietly walked through the camp at night; their tracks were seen in the morning—probably some venturous spirit who wished to ascertain how strong our force really was. They were also prowling about outside every night. Muskets were fired by some of our lazy party while they were lying on their backs. One of the enemy took a dexterous aim with a barbed spear as an old Dyak was warming himself before a fire in camp, sitting with his hands crossed to shade his face from the flames. The spear pinned both his hands together in this position, and fortunately so, for it kept the weapon from his chest and saved his life. The spear-head was cut off before it was extricated. Much is to be said for care and caution in most departments, but my experience tells me the less care on such an expedition, the more guard, and the fewer outer defences, the less is the enemy apt to close. Such a defence affords them as much, or even more shelter, than the

* Mr. Spenser St. John calculates his marches as a crow flies, but as milestones do not do the same in England, I take his estimate to be an error in jungles.

party inside, who have lights which cause their figures to be distinguished, and so provide marks for a lurking foe outside. When there are no defences the Dyaks seldom sleep, but sit watching and telling stories the night through.

On the day after our return we rested, and arranged arms and ammunition for a march on Sadok, and a mortar this time was expected to bring down Rentap's fortification. The larger division of the force was eager to join this attack. Sadok seemed to be a loadstone for the multitude. In the evening a grand conference was held, and the marching order arranged, but the natives evidently looked to this wonderful gun to do the work. It was a six-pounder, and only a few inches long. Few words were said, but Abang Boyong expressed his opinion that if the mortar and shell did not reduce the place, no men could. The force started early, and commenced by wading a stream which wetted us to the middle. The guides had informed us that water would not be obtainable for many hours on the hill; so out of a bamboo patch the force provided themselves with a joint each of this useful cane for carrying water, capable of holding about a quart, and convenient for slinging over the shoulders. At the last stream before ascending we filled them. The hills had just

been burnt clear of every leaf for farming, and the padi in some places was already planted. We could see our force several miles in front wending on its ant-like pilgrimage. Sadok loomed grim and grand before us, with a few white fleecy clouds still hovering about its back in the morning breeze.

Our Dyaks were carrying the mortar, slung in a network of rattans, the ammunition and shells being distributed among the force. The Saráwak division of stout Nakodahs were little accustomed to this kind of work, and very soon showed signs of having dry mouths. It was now fiery hot, and soon after mid-day we halted at a small farm-house, and every foot of shade from the sun's rays was crowded by our force. One of our Europeans was completely exhausted; he had only lately arrived from England, and was not yet inured to our broiling climate. On a good road in the old country he would doubtless have passed us all, but now was so thoroughly ikak (I know no other name) as to be obliged to be carried on the back of a Dyak. He was a man over six feet in height, and heavy in proportion. The Dyak who carried him up hill after hill, as if he had been an infant, was only 5 feet 2 inches without his shoes. We rested at this place about two hours, and then I accompanied a party to look out for water, and for a suitable place

to halt for the night. We went on and on without finding a drop. Once I heard a fall, but it was too far off the top of the ridge to be useful; and then our party was advancing up a steep, on the top of which, I was told, was a stockade held by the enemy. I followed as close as possible, and found, when passing over, that the enemy had been here, and the remains of the stockade was standing, which, after a few shots, they had deserted. Two houses were burning here; and now we were rapidly reaching Sadok's foot. At 5 P.M. we halted at a small house which belonged to Rentap's son-in-law Layang, who had joined the party on the summit of the mountain. Our party soon assembled here, and we prepared for the night. The atmosphere was delightfully cool at this elevation after the heat of the sun had passed, and the scenery was of the wildest description on all sides. How the females can carry their heavy burthens of padi and water for daily purposes is marvellous. They must be towers of strength, even to be able to climb such places, apart from the weights.

We stretched ourselves lazily on the platform of this primitive dwelling, and in the moonlight talked and thought of those far far away, wishing that our relatives could have caught a glimpse of their kith and kin in this wild distant land. At an early hour the

next morning, after having felt the cold of this elevated position very acutely, we bestirred ourselves, and took coffee, &c. Rentap's mustering tap on his gong was continual—how well I remembered its note. At seven we commenced the ascent, which is more gradual than upon the Sakarang side. Our Dyaks were already spreading up the hill, and had been on the *qui vive* the greater part of the night, as voices of the enemy had been distinctly heard on the borders of the jungle in our vicinity. We met with no obstacles in mounting to the summit, which we reached at a little past ten in the morning. Rentap's party were within his wooden walls, and not a living being could be seen. We passed the remains of my old encampment, at which I had spent eight days; the wood was now rotting, but the exact spot where I had disported myself in the muddy bed was plainly visible. Our force now set to work to collect wood, and within an hour a small stockade was erected, in which our mortar was arranged; it was mounted within easy firing distance of the enemy's fortress, and under the superintendence of Mr. John Channon the firing commenced. The shells were thrown with great precision, often lodging under the roof of the enemy's fort, at other times bursting over it, and more than once we heard them burst in the middle inside. Not a word was spoken by them,

and some were under the impression that the place was deserted, when the tapping of the old gong would recommence, as blithe as ever. Fifty rounds of shell were fired, besides hollow ones with full charges of powder, all of which appeared to take no more effect than if we were pitching pebbles at them. None of our party yet dared venture too near, but some of the most energetic pushed on to another stockade, within a few fathoms of the fort, when the enemy commenced firing, but the shot did not penetrate the wood. Our young Dyaks advanced, and two were immediately knocked over, and others wounded. Other parties also advanced, and an active scene ensued; some reached the planking of the fortress, sheltering their heads with their shields; showers of stones were thrown from the inside, and spears were jobbed from a platform above. There was such a commotion for a few minutes, that I made certain our party were effecting an entrance, and for the purpose of supporting them, I rushed out of the stockade, followed by a few, and had not passed over more than four or five feet, before the enemy fired grape, wounding a fine young Dyak behind me, whom I had just time enough to save from falling down the precipice, by seizing him by the hair, and passing him on to others behind the stockade. My brother and I advanced a few steps, but found our

following was too inadequate for storming, and many were already retreating; volleys of stones were flying round our heads, and as we retired again behind the stockade, another charge of grape poured into the wood now at our backs. The chiefs had congregated to beg us to desist from making any further advance, and I must admit that we only risked our lives needlessly. The natives wisely observed, "We cannot pull those planks down with our hands, we cannot climb over them, and our arms make no impression on the enemy."

I heard the latter distinctly call out, "Bring all your fire guns from Europe, and we are not afraid of you." One young fellow was struck by a shot, and perhaps only slightly wounded, but he fell over the precipice where we had no hope of finding him. As he disappeared, the enemy called out, "Ah! that's our share." And now what more could we do but quietly, with disheartened faces, prepare our paraphernalia for descending; many of our party were very severely wounded, and four killed. The enemy yelled in triumph, and followed us down the hill, but kept at a decent distance out of sight for fear of our fire-arms. We collected again in the house, in which we had left all our heavy things; the force talked, made the best of matters, and were not dispirited. The Dyaks buried their dead in the most secret spots, covering

their graves over with leaves and dead wood, but I subsequently heard the enemy found out the places, and dug the bodies up. It is nearly an impossibility to bury so as to prevent Dyaks finding out the spot. Among the wounded, one man had a shot in his eye, which was turned round, though as yet not materially injured; we were afraid to offer the poor fellow any assistance for fear it might enter further and touch the brain; subsequently the shot fell out, and the man's vision was partially restored. One old fellow sitting next to me had a ball in his back, which I laboured at for more than an hour, with a blunt penknife, and at last I succeeded in extricating it. On seeing the bullet, the man was never prouder in his life; and carefully putting it away, he thought himself "bertuah" (invulnerable). He stores that article among his charms, which he carries around his waist when in dangerous positions. The natives set a high value on those charms, and a case was brought before me, only a short time since, in which a Pangeran (a prince of royal blood) summoned a man of low degree for having lost his charms, which he stated had been handed down for generations. The value he required was $30, or 7*l*. It appears the defendant had borrowed these articles, and had accidentally lost them. On inquiry, the charms in question were known by

other parties to consist of two round pebbles, and one flat one, a small stone which had been found in a Banana; these were all mixed with a little sand, sewn up together, with strings attached for tying around the waist. The court placed a valuation of five pence on these articles, much to the Pangeran's chagrin.

Before daylight in the morning, the Dyaks had gone on, and when we were ready for moving, after coffee, &c., we found there were but few to follow behind us. However, the enemy were not numerous in our rear, and the party that opposed us, we could tell, numbered very few. I learnt after my return that there were only twenty-four men with Rentap, not one of whom was wounded or killed.

We now walked over the hills in the cool, and shortly after mid-day arrived at the stream, and at 4 P.M. reached the boats. As our provisions were getting short, the force prepared for a start downward at once. It was considered advisable that we should drop down the river as far as our lower force at Sungei Langit. Fitz and I were to bring up the rear, in case of the enemy becoming troublesome. The sun had nigh sunk before we started. Just after we shoved off, one of our large boats, holding forty men, filled and sunk; there was nothing for it but to leave her, and the boatless crew huddled themselves into our

boats, as many as possibly could; the remainder either walked or swam down on their shields. It was long after dark when we reached our force, and when stopping here for the night, the effluvia from half-buried dead bodies was something terrible. Numbers of our people had died of dysentery, and the Sadong Dyaks who burn their dead, had done it so imperfectly as nearly to stifle us. I was obliged to wrap the shawl over head and ears, and sleep. After an hour Sandom came to my boat and awoke me; sitting close to my side, he told me, in a confidential tone, that the Saribus Dyaks around the fort were not to be trusted, that his experience of his own people was, that they were not to be depended upon, unless your enemies are their enemies, and now they had refused to take the head of Sadji. "Remember, Tuan," he added, "you can do what you think best, I merely inform you." I told Sandom I was in no way anxious, and a little more time would right matters. We continued in conversation for fully two hours, and he enlightened me upon the perfidious practices of former days, and wound up by saying that all Dyaks were mad men in olden time.

Our force was moving down before light, but there was no hurry for our uppermost boats, and my craft was in such a dilapidated condition, that I was obliged to beach her, and patch her keel. This we did three

times before she would float, and then we found her bottom so thin, that a man had to keep his foot on a split all the while, to hold one plank even with another. She had been a good servant to me, and as with a horse, so in a minor degree with a boat, one possesses a kindly feeling towards its bones. We quickly floated down. All the large trees and wood that were lying across on our ascent, had been swept away by the strength of the water. I found the boat I had left by the bank bottom up, much further down, and we stopped for some hours to right her, as she was a valuable war boat of 60 feet in length; her planks were broken, and she was much damaged. We reached the fort in the afternoon. The wounded man who had been saved from falling by his hair, had died, and I had at any rate to be thankful, as that charge was intended for my benefit. Our party had lost many more from sickness than from wounds, and cholera had been playing sad havoc among the people who had not been actively employed. I left my old boat here, and returned to Sakarang overland, in preference to the long pull round by sea.

There was little doubt that this expedition had shaken the strength of our enemies considerably, and we expected that immediate offers of peace would have been the result, with the request that they might be

permitted to return to their own country, re-open trade and friendly relations. About one fourth of the enemy, in the course of two months, came back to their old abodes, and lived on intimate terms with the inhabitants of the lower country, but it was soon evident that there were other influences at work supporting the hostile chiefs, beyond our cognisance, against the Saráwak government. Rentap of Sadok, was still the rallying point for the multitude, the nucleus of the evil-disposed and rebellious spirits, and his nest was safe, after two attacks having failed in making the smallest impression upon it. However, we had gained something by the penetration into the interior, and had not suffered any material loss; besides, the Malays who had accompanied the expedition were now fast friends with us, having become enemies to the Dyaks; and the Saráwak Malays had benefited by the excitement, occasioned by the Chinese insurrection, which drove fear and tremor from their hearts.

A calm prevailed after the late expedition, during which we found time to look to other matters, and husband our resources, preparatory to further work, and struggles against our enemies. The habit of watchfulness, and of being surrounded by armed followers, however disagreeable at first, becomes natural. When absent it is quite missed.

My having to administer justice in a civil capacity, and again being employed in semi-military service, brought a double amount of envy, malice, and hatred to one's door, but in such positions one generally finds friends and supporters more than equal to opponents. A strong arm and just cause, and what mattered how difficult the task or hard the labour? It was no position for a family man, with a taste for the social luxuries of evenings at home. The enjoyable part of *our* life was the glorious independence of it, connected with a considerable degree of power and influence over fellow creatures. We could imagine mountains (not monarchs) our footstools, and gaze over the wide extent of wild waste until, as the Chaldeans of old did with the stars, we peopled it with multitudes.

I thought now, as I had spare time on my hands, I would devote it to agricultural pursuits, and so obtained some shoots of the sago palm for planting on a wide extent of freshly reclaimed mud land, which was reported of the best quality for the sago culture, being moist at the top, and firm underneath, to support the large heavy trees. The cocoa-nut grows best in land soft underneath and hard at the top, and it requires draining in marshy lands. Sago arrives at maturity in eight or ten years, and will fetch about 14*s.* per tree in the ground; the advantage of such an estate is, that

it requires so little care, and is always throwing out young shoots around the parent stem, thereby multiplying almost tenfold yearly. The young plants should be planted out, at sufficient distances apart, so as to allow the leaves to spread unencumbered. The leaves are used for making roofs, and the shell of the tree, after the sago is worked out, comes in useful for making the flooring of native houses.

There are two kinds of these palms, one with thorns, and one without; the former yields most sago flour, and has the advantage of being proof against the attacks of pigs; the latter however is much easier for working, as it does not wound the hands and feet of people employed on the estate. The piece of land I had chosen was now covered with padi, which was flourishing on this virgin soil to a surprising extent. At this time I often spent evenings in Dyak houses on the spot, and when indulging in the cigar, we had long conversations on various topics. It led me to contemplate an idea which certainly would have been realised, had not unforeseen events taken place to nip it in the bud. My idea was to become a chief of a long house in Dyak fashion on this embryonic plantation.

I should have had many followers to attach their doors to my dwelling, but whether it would have been

a success was a doubtful question, which was never proved, as shortly afterwards a distressing event occurred, which led to my being left in charge of Saráwak and the coast. So I was obliged to bid farewell to my projected plantation, which within a month was washed into the river by a landslip.

CHAPTER VII.

1859.

Visit to Rejang—Kanowit—Steele's escapes—Isolated position—Slave-born followers—Mukah—Mathusein's position—Difficulties—Dispersion of his enemy's forts—Fine demanded—Mathusein released—Proximity of Seriff Massahore—Trade restored—Return—Saribus head-hunting—Punishments—Messrs. Fox and Steele murdered—Deep conspiracy—Cogitations—Suspicions—Council of war—Expedition to Rejang—Abang Ali's good faith—Summary treatment at Sarikei—Gang of murderers—Seriff Massahore's visit—Armed followers—Execution of fortmen—Kanowit—Sad sight—Ruins—New fort—Council of war—Dyak attack—Their failure—Our advance march—Enemy's position—Firing—Attempt to save lives—Assault—Dyak daring—Dreadful conflagration—Loss of life—Poisoned arrows—Deadly effects—Return—Lintong—Difficulties with friends—Visit to Seriff Massahore—Return to Saráwak—Prosperity—Datu Hadji—His banishment—Europeans armed—Conspiracy—Extra watch and barring in—The bore in Batang Lupar—Dyak lady's affection—Lela Pelawan—His wisdom—Dyak fortmen—Absurd customs—Dyak hero worship—Marriage proceedings, Christian and Mahomedan.

DEATH and dangerous illnesses towards the end of last year had thrown a gloom over the atmosphere of our small circle, and no one had any heart to celebrate the usual festivities of Christmas and New Year. The duties were quietly carried on day after day without any spark of joy or pleasure to temper the routine.

I had resolved on making a tour to the different places on the coast on the first appearance of fine weather after the north-east monsoon, and in March set out. On reaching Sarikei, boats were kindly prepared for us by the Resident, Mr. Fox, and we proceeded to Kanowit, which is distant one hundred miles up the Rejang river. The pull was exceedingly tedious, and such an uninhabited river, with continuous low jungles on each side, gave me anything but a pleasant or favourable impression. There was no grand or beautiful scenery, not even a hill, which might break the monotony of the landscape, but the river was one broad placid mass of dark water slowly running towards the sea. In two days we reached Kanowit, and there the eye was relieved by rising grounds, with cultivation of padi and fruit-trees. The village and place which was called a Fort was a picturesque piece of irregularity and dilapidation. Some few Chinese traders had ventured to settle, but they were to all appearance a mob of rapscallions. The Kanowit village was situated on the opposite side to the fort, and the river here was 800 yards wide. An Englishman had been in charge of this isolated locality for the last eight years, and was now so accustomed to the life, language, and people, that he told me he should be sorry to exchange it for any other. For months

together no strange boat made its appearance, in fact, could not do so, as the freshes ran too strongly down in the rainy season. Saráwak even was a distant and highly civilised point to the Kanowit inhabitants, who for three or four months every year were wholly dependant on their own resources. The Kanowit stream lay on the left bank, and ran up into the interior in the direction of Sadok and head of Batang Lupar. This stream is inhabited by sea Dyaks, who had for the last fifteen or twenty years been migrating from the Saribus and Sakarang districts for the purpose of obtaining new farming grounds. These exoduses took place overland between one river and another. Such parties would do their four or five days' march, then build their houses, and proceed to farm for one or two years, after which they would recommence their march, and so on, until they arrived at their final destination.

We remained here three days, and during that time had ascertained all that could be known. Mr. Steele had not much confidence in either Malays or Dyaks beyond his own immediate vicinity, and considering the numerous times they had made attacks on the place, both openly and secretly, in taking the heads of the people close around, as well as the fact that he himself had had spears thrown at him more than once,

one is not astonished that he doubted their sincerity; and as possession of power is the almighty wand that brings a people, whether Dyak or European, to submission, it was in no way surprising that these inhabitants were troublesome and dangerous. One attack had been made on them by a force from Saráwak about sixteen years ago, when some of the Dyaks living on the border, or lower part, were burnt out; but the effect of this had passed off, and they had reverted to their former customs of head-hunting, and looking on all, excepting those of their immediate tribe, as enemies. The mouth of the Kajulau—the upper part of which river was attacked, as related, in 1857—was on the Kanowit river, about two days' pull from the Fort.

Before bidding farewell to this lonely quarter, I recommended the Resident to endeavour to obtain some Malays of respectability to take up their abode near, with whom he might act and whom he might trust. At present there was not a person of any rank living at Kanowit, and the population was as unprincipled a gang of cut-throats as could be found anywhere, living here because they were beyond law, and could obtain a dishonest livelihood from the Dyaks, and accumulate large profits, attended with little trouble or outlay. They stood by Mr. Steele

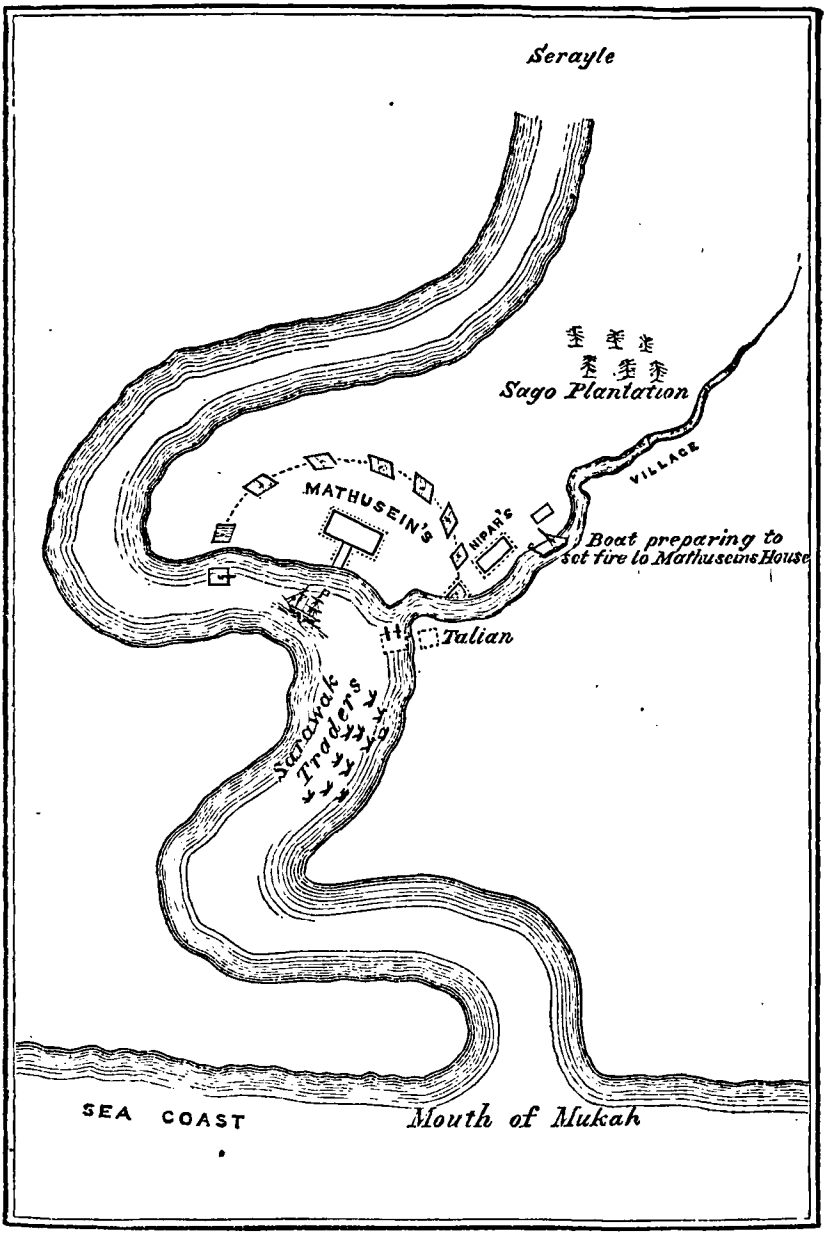
and the fort, knowing this to be their only means of security, as alone they could not have held their own in such a place. Mr. Steele's observation about his fortmen told a tale. He said: "Choose for a fortman one who has no connections, or goods, or home, or pride." This is a great mistake; for as with a European, so with a native; the man well born and well-to-do takes a great pride in his work, if he has a pride in himself and a character to lose. These slave-born followers were capable of being misled by anyone who would offer evil suggestions, as it too truly turned out in the fatal future of these two Europeans. I must confess I felt uneasy about the place. There was too smooth an appearance on the surface, without any substantial base.

A little Dyak captive boy accompanied us back, and slept between my legs on the way down the river. The poor little fellow soon recovered from any shyness he may have felt at first, and took kindly to white faces. He was only four years old, and had been paid as part of a fine.

On our arrival at Sarikei, I found more work parcelled out than I had expected, as letters were in waiting from our Sáráwak traders at Mukah, saying that it was quite useless their attempting to trade in Sagu while war was being carried on between Pan-

geran Mathusein and Nipah. They begged my support and aid, or the trade must be stopped. They assured me that one shot had been fired on the Saráwak flag by a badly-disposed Pangeran, and this was in itself a sufficient cause for making serious complaints, and if needed, examples. Replies were immediately dispatched to these communications, and we proceeded as fast as wind and tide would carry us, accompanied by a few boats of Sarikei Malays. When passing Egan we were joined by the Seriff Massahore, and with a fresh blowing sea-breeze were soon off the mouth of the Mukah. Before many minutes the beach was crowded with people, the most of whom were the Saráwak traders anxiously waiting our arrival. We were obliged, after getting inside the river, to anchor, as the current was strong against us. Our decks were immediately crowded, and I soon learnt all the news. The place was in a most disturbed state, and every one carried arms. I communicated with the head man, Pangeran Nipah, telling him that I came to open the trade with our friends, and to demand a fine of Pangeran Serayle, who had fired on our flag. Towards the close of the day a message came from Pangeran Mathusein, begging me to proceed to his assistance as soon as possible, as that night there was some probability of Nipah's party taking his fortification, which

was only defended by twenty-six men against about six hundred, who had built moveable stockades all around, and were gradually closing on him each night, and were now within about fourteen yards of his house. We warped up and arrived late at night, and let go our anchor off Mathusein's landing-place. It was the 27th night of the Mahomedan fast month, and the place being beautifully illuminated, blazed out, as strange a looking pile of fortifications and habitations as it has ever fallen to my lot to witness. Mathusein came aboard, and showed his gratitude more by manner than words. He was thin and haggard, and said, "Tuan, I thought I should have been a dead man to-night, as they intended adding to the illumination by the blaze of my house; but I did not fear death, and would never have run away." I told him not to come to see me again, but to prepare for going to Saráwak. On the first appearance of light we were all up and ready to proceed to work, in order to have the business over as quickly as possible. Our gun-boat decks were covered with armed men, and the bulwarks were closed in around by oars and logwood. The Europeans kept watch with loaded arms. The first step we took was to dislodge a floating battery, placed so as to guard Mathusein's landing-place. After destroying this I sent a party to pull down the other



PLAN OF FORTIFICATIONS IN MUKAH IN THE ATTACK ON PANGERAN MATHUSEIN'S HOUSE. BY PANGERAN NIPAH.

different stockades, numbering some twenty-five, of all shapes and sizes. Besides these, there were boats built up with barricades below and aloft. These were purposely arranged for dropping or throwing fire on to Mathusein's roof. Pangeran Mathusein's fort was being pulled down also, and before mid-day there was a clearance and change in the aspect of affairs. I then demanded a fine for the insult offered to the Saráwak flag. Agents came from many parties who wished to defer, and make excuses, so the "Jolly" was hauled up the creek in front of their houses. The commotion this caused was really astonishing; the men seemed beside themselves, rushing about with arms and shields, and talking violently. The Seriff Massahore was with me, and professed the most ardent friendship and desire to assist.

Out of Pangeran Nipah's house there were several guns pointed directly on to our decks; and the muzzle of our six-pounder was looking upwards, loaded and primed. It would have been close quarters if we had played with fire-arms, as we could jump from the decks to the banks.

After an hour or so a message came to say they would pay down the fine immediately; and then some amiable-looking people smiled courteously, and said, they always looked on our gun-boats as friendly

to Mukah, and the same as their own vessels, and why there had been such a disturbance among their people they could not imagine. The fine was paid, and we dropped down just in time to save the tide, so as to get out of this creek, which was dry at low water. I sent a conciliatory letter to Pangeran Nipah—whom I had known before, and I was aware that weakness was his principal failing—begging him hereafter to do his utmost to foster the trade between Saráwak and Mukah. After this Pangeran Mathusein proceeded to Saráwak, and I to Saribus. The Mukah trade was brisk for the remaining months during that year, and there was no further complaint from any party. I received many communications from Pangeran Nipah, written in a friendly tone. On my arrival at Saribus I found the Dyaks had been in search of heads. A chief was fined, and made to disgorge two of these, which he had come by unlawfully, having taken them from some of our own people. The heads I always kept in an old Dyak's house at Sakarang, ready to be returned on a future day if the relations claimed them. At Saráwak I found a long and interesting letter had arrived from the Sultan of Sulok to the Rajah of Saráwak. His particular object seems to have been to complain of the harsh treatment received from the Spaniards, who, he said, had attacked

him with fire-ships, and killed many of his people without any reason whatever; and had also taken possession of some of his islands without his permission. He had heard so much of the strict justice of the English, more particularly of the Rajah, his friend, that now he hoped he should receive assistance from him. He wished to have an Englishman to live with him, who might trade or work as he felt disposed, and could see, or be witness, that all was carried on fairly between his country and other nations. This letter was well worded and expressed, and, as is to be supposed, showed the most inveterate hatred to the Spaniards, who have been burning out some of those pirates' nests of late years, and adding much to their possessions in that direction.

Few events ruffled the surface of our quiet life; trade was brisk, and I was again bound for Sakarang, in company with another vessel and some friends. After living there three days, events shortened our visit and saddened our hearts. On rising one morning at five o'clock, according to my usual custom, I passed out through many faces and people to whom I did not offer a remark, as, during my morning's quarter-deck walk, few dared to communicate with me. After the bath and coffee, I considered myself anybody's property. But on this morning as I paced to and fro, my youth,

Gani (who had been a steady follower since he was a child, and whom I looked on more in the light of a brother than servant), whispered, "Have you heard the news?" "No, Gani." "Then Messrs. Fox and Steele are dead—murdered; and some people are waiting to see you." I merely remarked, "very well," but I felt, among the thousands of false reports that we were almost daily in the habit of hearing, that this one was too true, and that something more remained behind. This was the first stroke of a foul conspiracy, which had been hatching for some time past in the minds of a few discontented, intriguing rascals, deep and subtle as men or devils could be. The party that brought the news said that Fox and Steele had been killed by "Sawing" and "Kalei." Their dead bodies had been seen, and Kanowit was now in the hands of enemies and murderers. The lives of all the white men in the country had been aimed at, but the first blow was struck too soon; they warned me to *beware*, but one of these reporters caused a suspicion in my mind from the first. I had known him as being an unprincipled, hard-headed fellow, clever and plausible. He was called Tani; the other man was merely a tool. I determined not to act precipitately in the matter, but to sift the news further, by listening steadily to all parties, and endeavouring to learn how

deeply the plot had spread through the country. We held a council in my private room, and I quietly detailed what had happened, and begged Aing to watch, and prepare the boats to be in readiness for active work. After having dispatched an express to Watson in Saribus, to furnish him with the news, and beg him to keep his arms loaded, with revolvers always by his side, we left for Saráwak; many natives came to see us off, and offered many quiet words of sympathy. On my way back by this slow method of travelling, when thoughts were rapidly coursing through my brain, quite a new feeling came over me—one of intense thirst and concentrated desire to seek out and bathe my hands in the blood of those who had murdered our much-lamented friends. I pondered over matters steadily for three days, and then determined to proceed to acts, with as compact a force as we could gather together; and for this purpose an assembly was held, consisting of all the chiefs and head men, and, with a sword in front of me, I declared that there should be no haven before the death of those two men was avenged. And my object now was to proceed to Sarikei, thence to Kanowit, to recapture the place, rebuild the fort, and make attacks on any parties of conspirators within reach. In five days more we had started, and were towed for some distance by Saráwak

boats. While they were being attached a breeze sprung up, and the vessel, with half-set sails, got way on her, and unluckily went over the nearest boat before her crew could let go; the boat came bottom up astern, the crew rose on either side and soon clambered aboard, rather out of breath, but meeting with no other injury. They had only lost their arms, for which I paid double value, and this remunerated them for their ducking. Just before leaving Saráwak, a boat arrived bringing Abang Ali, who had come direct from Kanowit; he reported the whole place burnt down and destroyed, and that the murderers had fled with their families up the river. Abang Ali was the most trustworthy man in Sarikei, and he gave me all the names of parties implicated in the proceeding, besides the Kanowits. One named Abi, who, with Talip, had murdered Steele, had already been put to death. Talip had escaped.

The sad event happened early in the afternoon. Mr. Fox had been superintending the digging of a ditch, and Mr. Steele was lounging about in the fort, both unarmed. The latter was in conversation with Abi and Talip, whom he had known and trusted for years, but their previous characters had been extremely bad. There was in a moment a simultaneous onslaught both by Steele's companions and a party of Kanowit

people; the latter rushed from a Chinaman's house and struck Mr. Fox in the back with a spear; he fell into the fort moat and was killed. Talip drew his parang and struck at Steele, but the latter, being an active man, seized the weapon, when the handle became entangled in Talip's clothing. Talip was overpowered, but Abi, standing by, cut Steele over the head, killing him immediately. After this the watchman fired and killed one of the murderers; a Chinaman was also cut down; and then, instead of the fortmen guarding the premises, they gave it up into the hands of the assassins, who forthwith proceeded to rifle it of all its contents, and to burn it down. The guns were distributed to different parties. The heads of Messrs. Fox and Steele were taken by some of the Dyak enemies, and their bodies left half buried in the ground.

On my arrival at Rejang, I anchored off the place. Abang Ali was with me, and had informed me of the part that Tani had taken in the business; that he was at Kanowit at the time with the murderers, and although he did not actively participate, he was the principal speaker among them in a gang assembled in the jungles just before the murders took place. I at once resolved to seize Tani, as his dangerous character was known throughout the country. After

which I dispatched Ali to Sarikei, with directions to bring all those to trial who were suspected of having been concerned in the murders of our friends. If found guilty, they were to be put to death forthwith. He proceeded in a fast boat, and on arriving at Sarikei, he heard the greater part of the suspected ones had run up a small creek, and there thrown up a temporary fortification. The one or two who remained were seized, subjected to a summary trial, and kris'd. After which an attack was made up the small stream, the place taken, and the people put to death. This was the first brush, and all the gang were murderers many years before, and had escaped from the prison in Saráwak, where they had been confined for murdering some Sibuyau Dyaks. While an annual feast was being carried out according to Dyak custom, all were dancing and brandishing their swords, when these Malays drew their weapons (as sharp as razors) across the throats of the Dyaks, and afterwards pillaged their goods.

After these people had suffered death, I arrived at Sarikei, and first of all summoned the fortmen who had given up the fort, to stand their trial before some chiefs from Saráwak. Death was the punishment for men having quitted their posts without doing their utmost to protect the Government name and property.

These men were tried, sentenced, and executed. The Seriff Massahore came aboard to pay his respects, with twenty-five armed followers. This man was deeply suspected; but I could not find a clue, or a tittle of evidence, through which he might be brought to trial. I thought all in this large river were more or less implicated; but we could not put all to death, though conspiracy was rife. Some were the originators and instigators; some again the active workers; others merely dupes; and some again only listeners; but none tale-bearers. So my course was to meet the Seriff in a friendly manner, without a shadow of suspicion on my brow. And as he sat on one chair, I sat on another within a foot of him; he had his sword, I had mine: both had equally sharpened edges. There was also a guard of armed blunderbuss-men on deck, and the redoubtable old Subu, although I beckoned him away, would take up his seat close behind me, with his gigantic parang on his waist. We sat and talked cordially on various topics, and he particularly recommended every precaution, as he said he feared many badly-disposed men were about. So after an hour of this hollow friendship we separated, he going on shore again. What would he not have given for my head!

Tani suffered death also, and something had already been done, but much more yet remained. My wish

was to punish those immediately implicated before touching the instigators. I could only get at the former by the assistance of the latter.

I felt apprehensive that I should have difficulties with my own people, after they had witnessed such severe proceedings; but was determined to carry out my original resolve, and permit nothing to shake me. I felt, while in this state, no more fear of danger or death than of washing my hands in the morning. A man with arms constantly about him, and death staring him in the face, soon loses the sensation of what people improperly style nervousness. An express boat was dispatched to Kanowit for the remains of our late friends, and they were buried at Sarikei near the fort; poor John Channon performed the ceremony, as the natives held shy of such work. John returned aboard in a fainting state, and was laid up for some days after; he was very much attached to Mr. Steele, and the loss of one friend, in such a place, and by such means, was indeed a loss.

I lingered here as long as I could, waiting for the Sakarang force, as the one with me was inadequate to meet an enemy. The Datu Hadji had accompanied me, as I preferred bringing him to leaving him in Saráwak, where he might be mischievous. His nature was evil at the core,—always quarrelsome and trea-

cherous towards every one in a superior position to himself, and in addition, he was a very clever and plausible villain. "When he smiles he bites," as Shakespeare says. At length we set off for Kanowit without the Sakarang force. I could not account for their delay, and could not afford to wait longer for them. The Scriff Massahore pretended to take every care of me, and was most desirous of placing his special guard over my person, which honour I declined. In passing up at night our skipper ran us into the jungle, and half awake I rushed on deck, fancying the day of judgment was at hand. To my intense surprise there was a loud cracking, and we were enveloped in leaves and large bushes. We had carried away top-mast and jib-boom, and after a great deal of trouble got clear again. The river was wide enough for a line-of-battle ship to work up. The vessel we were in belonged to the bishop, who had kindly offered her to me for this extra undertaking, and the accommodation was roomy and comfortable.

In two days we arrived at Kanowit, where there was nothing to be seen but black desolation. The poles and some fragments of the old houses were left, but nothing else. The place looked as if it had been cursed by evil spirits; and when on the same afternoon I went on shore to measure out a place for a new

fort, the first thing that caught my eye was part of the bloody remains of my friends.

This turned me faint and sick, but I was obliged to feign unconcern, as hundreds of Dyaks were around the spot, who had been my enemies, and were now doubtful friends. They stared at me from beneath their eyelids as something demoniacal or angelical, with that shy, unpleasant frown which so often misleads strangers to think that their countenances are really bad. I was glad to get aboard again, as the smell was sickeningly unpleasant. There were about a hundred boats of Dyaks around us, waiting for my orders to proceed, they cared not whither, so long as there was an enemy. A few of the principal chiefs whom I knew came aboard, and I must give them credit for behaving exceedingly well *for Dyaks*. They told me the enemy had stopped up a small stream named Kabah, and had fortified themselves there. They recommended our advancing upon them at once, as there was some prospect of their vacating that place for some other locality further inland, where probably they would be reinforced by others, and give us much greater trouble. Our Malay party at once set to work to build a fort. There was wood of the hardest description to be found in quantities.

At eight in the evening I called a council of war, to

ascertain how far the people were willing to proceed and attack this place, which was about fifteen miles further up the Rejang river, and some considerable distance inland. The Malay spokesmen gave very sage advice, in recommending that the one hundred boats of Dyaks should go on first, should try the strength of the enemy's fortification, and if they failed, the Malay force would then advance with fire-arms. The Dyak chiefs were next assembled, and I plainly told them that they were strangers to us, and we could not tell how their hearts were disposed, except by their mouths, but that it was requisite to have more proof before we placed our lives in danger. Therefore they must proceed and make an attack on Sawing's fortification; and if they failed, they were to surround it, and prevent the enemy from moving elsewhere; also to dispatch news of their failure, when we would come to their assistance with more arms, &c.

As morning dawned, these wild fellows set off in their large boats, many of which had sixty men aboard, and were much longer than the pinnaces. The fort soon made an appearance. The Malays were working of their own accord, as I did not land again.

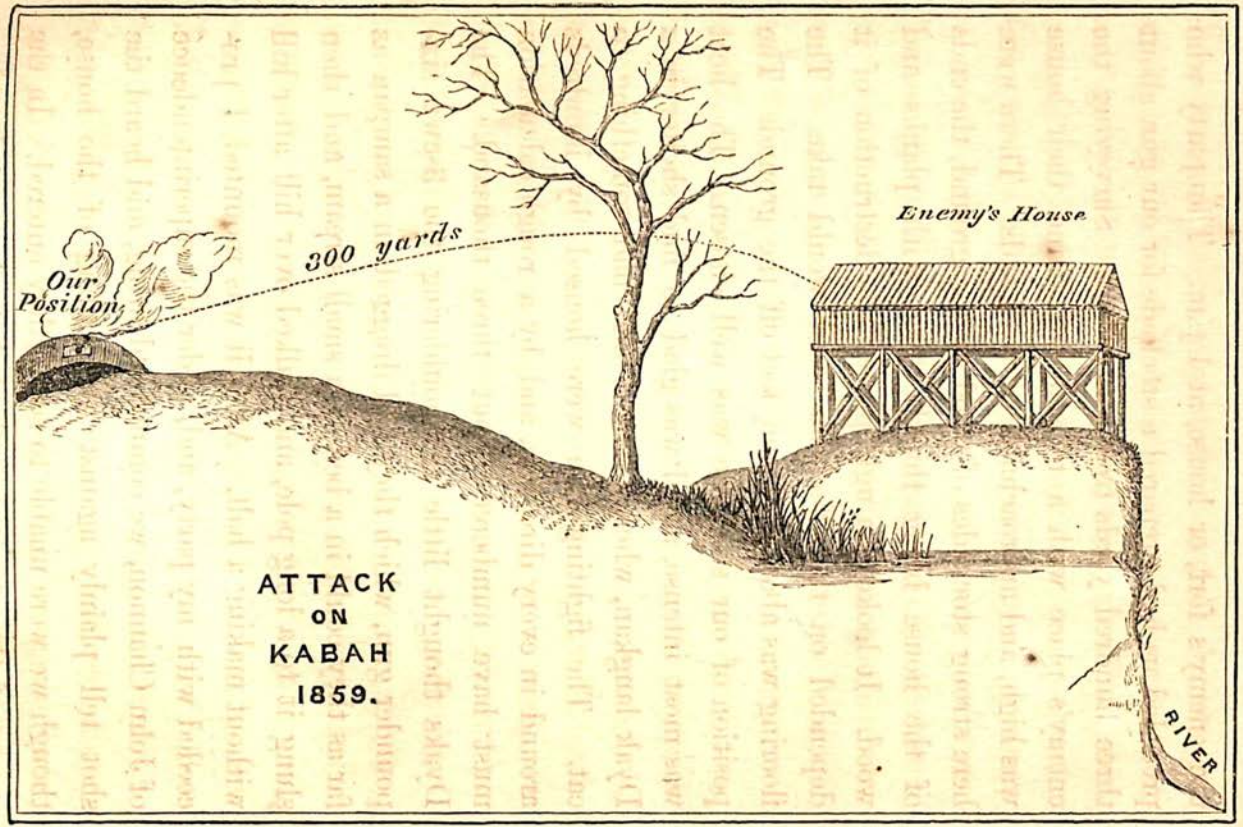
No force had yet arrived from Sakarang. This was a great disappointment to me, as without them my power was so limited. It now set in for rain; and

two days after this, a boat arrived with one of the young Dyak chiefs, who bounced on board, and boisterously told us that they had had four men killed and many wounded; that the enemy were very strong and well armed, and every time they advanced some of their people were knocked over. So now their force had taken up their position out of range of fire-arms all around the fortification. They had thus proved that their hearts were well inclined towards us, and hoped that we should advance at once, as their provisions would not last long.

I made arrangements at night with our people, and we set off early the next morning, in rain, leaving the "Saráwak Cross" (the Bishop's vessel) here, and took the Jolly only with the pulling boats. A fresh was running strong, and, with many boats in tow of our vessel, it was as much as we could do to make way. It was not till next day, in the afternoon, that we reached the mouth of the small stream. Many Dyaks came aboard at once; they were in great glee, and took the guns and ammunition away. I told them one would be enough, but they wished to take both, as well as everything else on board; and I really believe if I had recommended their hauling the Jolly overland, also, they would have tried it. I had two Europeans with me—John Channon and Lawford—the latter a

new comer. John had been my companion and assistant for many dreary months in the hot cabin of his vessel. He had had charge of the Jolly for years, and many a creek and dangerous cranny had she become acquainted with in our expeditions. His valuable services, as well as steady and brave conduct, both on board and in the jungles, cannot be too highly praised in the annals of Saráwak.

The few preparations we had to make were soon completed, and early in the morning, as we were armed *cap-a-pié*, a deputation came aboard, headed by the Datu Hadji, begging me not to accompany the land party, as, if anything happened to me, he was afraid of the consequences from the Rajah. I put an end to this in a few words, as I was in no trim for palavering. The Jolly was left in charge of the Datu Tumonggong, with a large force at his disposal, and we proceeded. My thoughts, not expressions, were, whether I should see her sides again. One cannot help thinking; and the last few days had much added to my gloom. No Sakarang force yet! Our Malay land body only numbered forty men, and those, excepting Panglima Seman and Abang Ali, were of the worst kind of warriors, although good men at other duties. We soon fell into marching order, and trudged over a rugged and slippery path, arriving at


Enemy's House
300 yards
Our Position
ATTACK
ON
KABAH
1859.
RIVER

the enemy's fort, or house, at 1 p.m. The party who preceded us had prepared a stockade for our gun about three hundred yards from the enemy. Surveying the enemy's place with a telescope, I found their house was high, and approachable at both ends. There were here strong stockades of wood on the ground, the ends of the house being thickly piled with planks and wood. It looked an ugly place; the destruction of it depended on the effect our shot would take. The flooring was about eighteen feet off the ground. The position of our stockade was well chosen. The heat was most intense, and I was glad to find shelter in a Dyak langkan, where I rested and had something to eat. The fighting-men were housed by hundreds around in every direction, and by a rough calculation must have numbered about three thousand. The Dyaks thought little of shouldering the 3-cwt. six-pounder gun, which they had dragged in a sampan as far as they could in a bed of a small stream, and then slung it to a long pole, and walked over hill after hill without making a halt. After it was mounted, I proceeded with my party, and, under the superintendence of John Channon, we commenced firing, and heard the shot tell plainly against the walling of the house, though we were unable to see if they entered. In the course of the evening we fired forty-five rounds, when

a white flag appeared, signifying they had had enough of it; but a white flag was little regarded by us from such rascals as those, who had no more principle than pigs. The enemy had commenced early to return our fire, but their shot went high, and told amongst some of the Dyaks in the rear, who thought themselves safe. The chief, Sawing, was the active man, and was seen and heard giving directions right and left. He had sent me a message only the day before, to say that he awaited my arrival to amok* against our force; that he did not regard Dyaks as enemies.

In the dusk of the evening a few of our party spoke to the enemy, who had suffered much from our shot, and were, they said, willing to come to terms. It was now an impossibility, as our force of Dyaks would be uncontrollable, and I would never receive them except to hang them all, *minus* the women and children. I did not trust much to their hollow words, so dispatched a party to bring up more ammunition in early morning. The night closed in quiet and tranquil. Our sheds were only very temporary buildings, and merely sheltered us from the moon's beams.

We had watches all night, as I had no Dyaks to whom I could trust. The evening meal and cigar,

* Running amuck.

and then, amid a crowd of forms incongruously disposed, I slept. The next morning, on looking round, the good Panglima Seman was sitting close to me. There was a motley group of some hundreds of Dyaks congregated on all sides of my abode, dressed in war costume, and vociferating at the top of their voices, declaring that they would rest with their forefathers, or die, rather than not have the blood of the enemy. Their spitting and spluttering of vengeance was astonishing.

At an early hour Fitz Cruickshank arrived, having pulled night and day to overtake me. I was delighted to see him. He reported Aing, with the Sakarang force of seventy boats, to be some distance yet behind.

My wish was to interfere, so as to save the women and children, if possible, and I dispatched a messenger within speaking distance of the house, to demand the Government arms and goods that had been taken from the Kanowit fort. After some time a few dollars and old muskets were sent. Then I sent to tell the women and children to come in. They replied, they were afraid of the Dyaks. So after giving them a certain time, and knowing there was no use in further delay, I ordered Abang Ali to advance and take the house if he could. The fellows rushed on, yelling fiercely, and the different tribes were evidently trying to outdo

each other in acts of bravery. I kept our small Malay force together in the stockade with Panglima Seman, as a panic might arise among them, and the besieged become desperate, and charge us; so the gun was ready with grape and canister at a moment's notice. I watched the movements of the attacking party, and a more extraordinary sight could not have been witnessed. The Malays advanced to within thirty or forty yards of the house, and then cautiously sought shelter behind the stumps of trees, from which they could use their muskets. The Dyaks advanced madly until they were close, and some underneath the house, tumbling over obstacles, dashing right and left, in search for some place where they might ascend. The enemy were blowing poisonous arrows at them. Our Dyaks commenced clambering up the posts, carrying their arms and spears; and after one had got a footing, peeping through the crevice, or removing some fragments occasioned by the shot of yesterday, there would be a momentary skirmish, and down they would all go to the ground again. A short time after, this scène was repeated, and then one had entered. In about five minutes out he came, and down they all jumped to the ground, evidently having encountered the enemy inside. One foolish and daring fellow had climbed to the top of the roof: of course he was killed.

One lot entered, and had a fight, sword to sword, with the enemy, in which two of our party were killed. And then a man brought a burning brand, and set the ends of the building on fire, which immediately after was blazing furiously. Now came the horrors of war indeed. Some were burnt, some killed, some taken prisoners, and some few escaped. So ended that fortification. Its roof fell with a crash, leaving only its smoking embers to tell where it had stood. Our Dyaks were mad with excitement, flying about with heads; many with fearful wounds, some even mortal. One lad came rushing and yelling past the stockade, with a head in one hand, and holding one side of his own face on with the other. He had had it cut clean open, and laid bare to the cheek-bone, yet he was insensible to pain for the time; but before five minutes elapsed, he reeled and fell exhausted. We then doctored him the best way we could, by tying his cheek on as firmly as possible, in the hope that it would unite and heal. This it eventually did, leaving a fearful disfigurement. Many men had been struck by Sumpitan arrows, which were most mortally poisonous.

My Lingga head man had received a wound, and was fainting, when I gave him brandy; after which he was laid up three days with fever. To a few wounded

Dyaks, also, brandy was administered, and they recovered after suffering a few days. Kalei's wife and others were brought to us as captives, and were handed to some of their relations among our force. We heard Sawing and Kalei had escaped, but how I never learnt. And now came the most tedious work of all, in getting Dyaks to carry back the guns and ammunition. I was apprehensive they would leave us in the lurch; it was no use trying to do anything so long as they were in such a disturbed state. At length some chiefs came and engaged to take charge of them, and then we fell into marching order, and moved towards the landing-place. On my way back I passed many langkans of Dyaks. Some were merry over their victory, most were joyous; but I saw many who were grave, and lamenting the loss of some relation killed in the fray. Before one hut there lay a fine strapping fellow, having just breathed his last. I waited to look at the body, as he seemed only to sleep. He had been struck in the chest by an arrow, which left no more mark than the probe of a pin. After receiving the wound, he dosed off to wake no more, and died half-an-hour after he was struck. The people stood around his corpse, weeping sadly, without ostentation. Another handsome young fellow was cut down in the first

attack inside the house. He had been with me in the morning, and said he would be the first to draw his sword. He did, and was the first killed.

We walked on, and I was glad when I reached the boats, and felt, on again entering the Jolly, that it was an episode that would be remembered in the annals of this country. Our friends' lives were being avenged, but more had yet to be done. Our loss had been thirty-five killed, and numbers wounded; the enemy, one way and another, must have lost over a hundred. And now, alas, too late, the Sakarang force had arrived, eighty boats strong. They saw victory without feeling it, and were severely galled in consequence. Their displeasure was directed against me, and I was obliged to give the chiefs (who sat around the Jolly's bulwarks) a few strong words of my mind, and dismissed them forthwith. They slunk away down the river again, after finding there was no enemy left. They had been in fault, and there was no help for it; though they were my best and oldest friends. I heard one or two declare they would never follow me again. The victorious party were cheering and yelling their war cries, and this tended greatly to rile my friends; a trivial pretext would have caused bloodshed between the victors and the disappointed.

We remained at anchor that night, and in the

evening I dispatched a party to recover the heads of our late friends, and to impose a fine on the parties who held them. These heads had been given away as a bait for the Dyaks to assist the Kanowit people. As a rule, there is a disinclination on the part of the Dyaks to meddle much with a white man's head; they imagine the spirits do not altogether approve of the proceeding.

Lintong was the leader in obtaining these pieces of Dyak furniture; a more active and a wilder fellow, with eyes ever rolling, and tongue ever wagging, could not be found. He was a thorough savage, and troublesome beyond measure, but useful at peculiar kinds of work, and cared nothing about old superstitions and practices. After I had given the necessary directions, and told him to be quick, he would jump over the side into his boat, saying, "I never take long about anything." The next day we weighed, and took only four hours in reaching Kanowit; it had taken a day and a half going up. The bugler was playing, but I am afraid the music was somewhat lost on the natives. The fort was finished, and now had only to receive its guns. I dispatched an express boat with our news, which I was certain would gladden the hearts of the people in Saráwak. And now I remained to restore confidence among the Dyaks, and set a guard in the

fort to keep things together during my absence. Abang Ali, the only really good man, took charge of it, and after seeing all the Dyak chiefs, and having chatted in a friendly manner with them, we bade adieu, and reached Sarikei, where I inflicted some severe fines, and paid a visit to Seriff Massahore's house. He received me with a salute as I entered his audience-hall. Fitz accompanied me. We were then taken inside the house by ourselves, and confronted with his mother and sister. The former kept her stern eyes on me the whole time, and I never saw a more disagreeable or worse mannered old hag. The daughter was a strapping wench, very fair, and had the large rolling dark eye of an Italian; she looked a wild one. I was very silent, and glad to leave the house; they again saluted, and it was returned from aboard the Jolly.

Most of my party had started for Saráwak, and as I was weighing anchor, the Seriff Massahore came on board with twenty followers, armed; he and his people assisted in hauling at the ropes, and told me I should travel in a steamer. I cordially bade him farewell, and thanked him for the assistance he had afforded me. In two days we were in Saráwak. On my arrival, Grant and Alderson received me with every honour, in salutes and decorations. The native chiefs met me half way down the river, and their

people, in numerous small boats, towed both our vessels up. I was immensely proud of such a reception.

Affairs now were apparently quiet in the country; I therefore concluded we should have peace for a length of time. Little did I know what was fermenting in the minds of so many under the smooth surface. I required rest, as my nervous system was somewhat shaky, now the excitement of past events was over. Our first social improvement was laying the foundation of a hospital, which was sadly required, as the sick were a public nuisance in the streets, living on the alms received from their countrymen. The Chinamen subscribed liberally towards it. The site was chosen, and the building in a few months was completed, consisting of a large, commodious house, capable of receiving two long lines of beds for sick persons. Affairs generally looked prosperous. Trade in Sagu was especially brisk, antimony ore being worked in greater quantities than formerly; and even our revenues looked somewhat better than they had done for a long time past.

In the month of September, 1859, I heard our old sinner, the Datu Hadji, had been absent on an excursion down the river, calling at some Dyak houses, and on making inquiry, I found he had gone on to Lundu. This movement was contrary to regulation, as he was

supposed to be under the supervision of his relatives in Saráwak.

After a few days the Tumonggong (one of the oldest chiefs) came to me in the morning and said, "Tuan, take care of yourself; don't go about, as you are in the habit of doing, unprotected. You ride by yourself and walk unarmed; any man can waylay and murder you. *Remember, I caution you as an old man and friend.*"

His observations and manner produced a great effect on my mind. I knew him to be sincere by his tone, and he had ordered his followers out of the room before he commenced speaking. I promised him sincerely I would be more cautious in future. He further observed, that many suspicious reports had been flying about, before the Tuan Besar left for England; he had also warned him to be cautious. "The fines," he added, "imposed on Mukah seemed for a time to quiet affairs."

The same evening the principal chiefs were assembled and asked whether they recommended the Europeans wearing arms. I told them it was contrary to our customs, and I was extremely averse to issue such a regulation, but would do so if they thought it necessary. They were evidently pleased with the idea, and answered, "Why do we wear arms? because we cannot trust our neighbours." The Imaum said, "I am a

Hadji, and not supposed to wear a sword, but look!" and he opened his jacket, showing his hidden kris, a foot in length, and śharp as a razor. I was aware it was quite useless asking them to give their authority for these suspicions; and the next morning, an order was given for Europeans to wear arms on all occasions. For the last three days I had particularly remarked my personal servant had been about me more than usual, showing many little attentions in which he was generally very lax. He had also placed my revolver carefully outside my pillow, instead of underneath; and had, when he made the bed, laid my sword drawn, so as to be by my side. I could not account for the change at the time, and always being accustomed to have a sword for a bed-fellow, no particular remark followed; but other coincidences brought the matter to light. Two nights before, strange to say, two suspicious-looking characters were seen walking round my bungalow. When hailed, they disappeared. The Court-writer, an old and faithful servant, had cautioned me against sleeping in a small open bungalow; but this was a matter of necessity, as there was no other. After these numerous breaths of danger brewing, I considered we were justified in arming; in fact, we should be neglecting the public weal if it were not done.

A few days after this a report came to me that the

Datu Hadji had been concerting plans with a Sibuyau Dyak chief, to be in readiness at a certain time with his people, to amok into the fort in Saráwak, and take the heads of all those who resisted. The same Dyak had been heard to say, on several occasions, that the white men would not remain long as leaders; and he intended supporting the Datu Hadji and Brunei Rajahs against the rule of strangers.

A letter at this time was received by the Bishop from Mr. Gomez, the missionary at Lundu, who complained of a Nakodah (who was a relative of the Datu Hadji), having spread evil reports among the Dyaks. He told the Orang Kaya that he had better not become a Christian, as all of that following would shortly be put to death. And many other stories of a similar nature were rife. After I had ascertained the ground of such statements, and found them corroborated by many who were cognisant of facts, I determined to put a stop to Datu Hadji's doing more injury. So I assembled the chiefs, and acquainted them that I should turn him out of the country immediately he returned, and should prepare at once in case any opposition was shown. The chiefs seemed satisfied, and said that they were powerless with such an old and morose man, and recommended me to use my own judgment in dealing with him, engaging to assist me. Guns were

loaded, and gunboats fenced in, but everything was done quietly without a bustle. A guard was placed in the Government House, and the apertures were barred to prevent sudden rushes. The day after, the culprit, who had returned, was informed he had to leave the country. Friendly people were mustered from neighbouring rivers, and were lounging about in groups, ready at a moment's notice. The place assumed a striking appearance, and parading parties whispered together significantly; all wore arms, and work was suspended. Next morning came, and the Saráwak chiefs, first of all, assembled the Nakodahs and population in the native Court. The Bandar addressed them in these curt words: "I follow the Saráwak Government; there is business to be done. All those who are disposed to follow and assist me, hold up their hands." They all responded favourably, and he then made known, "The government banishes Datu Hadji and Nakodah Dulah from Saráwak, as they are considered too dangerous to live among us." Some of his relatives conveyed the news to him, and told the Hadji he had to leave the next day; an allowance would be granted to him by government. Resistance was useless on his part; but it was said, if he could have obtained a following he would have been ready to head them. People, however, were unwilling to knock their

heads against certain destruction. The chiefs came and reported fully what had passed, and they stood responsible for his conduct during his short stay here. So terminated this affair. He left amid many kind farewells, and the people returned to their everyday occupations, knowing that a dangerous rascal had been expelled the country. Most of them were really glad in their hearts. I was more puzzled, however, what to do with the Dyak, who was differently implicated. He was committed to prison for an indefinite period; and his followers hung about the entrance and gates for several days, complaining loudly; but at length, finding the law deaf to their remonstrances, they went to their homes, and soon thought more of their padi farms than the prisoner.

I now again visited Sakarang, thinking that our path was quite smooth. The north-east monsoon was setting in, and then, communication would be difficult with Saráwak, as the sea runs very high on our coast in that season. It lasts for about six weeks in one continual gale, between Christmas and the middle of February. Before, and after, there are also heavy blows for about a fortnight; and after March the south-west monsoon sets in fair and smooth, when calms are prevalent for a month, before the sea and land breezes set in regularly. This has been my ex-

perience for ten years, as an average during that time; but the seasons vary very much, and we seldom get two consecutive monsoons exactly alike. The sea runs high on the coast, which is exposed to the northerly winds, down from the China seas, and as the water is shallow it occasions a nasty short wave.

In proceeding up the Sakarang river, I happened to stop at an intermediate Dyak's house, and while there had an opportunity of witnessing the most dangerous part of the breaking of the bore. The sight is very exciting, as well as very grand, for the wave, about ten feet high, broke in a mass of foam from bank to bank, with a mighty roar. It passed close to our boat's stern, which was hauled up, and then dashed on, being followed by a succession of about fifteen large rollers of equal height close together. Its average pace is fifteen miles per hour, but in the shallow, and through tortuous passages, it meets with considerable obstacles, and is retarded in consequence. The little Dyak boys seem never to tire of coming down to the river's bank to welcome this flood; and in the less dangerous places go out in their canoes to race on its curling wave: the upshot is that nine out of ten are swamped,—but it matters little, as after it passes they shake the water out, and jump into their boats again. No boat can stand its force, and in many places it

would dash over a vessel's bows and break her moorings. This is by far the most dangerous river we have; and to recount the narrow escapes with which I have met while pulling up and down, would be immeasurably tiresome to my readers. One's heart generally jumps in certain places, as such dangers are different from a sea-way, which is continuous. In a river you are drawn in, and swung about in a helpless condition, even though close to the banks; large trees of several feet in diameter are seen bounding on, then whirled and dashed again to the sandy bottom; and such sights at night in the most dangerous places are awful. The different native names for points and bays express unpleasant localities, as, Fearful, Agitated, and Evil points; the Devil's Bay, &c.

The Sakarang folk, on my reaching the fort, flocked about me, and the remark made by the most sensible man was, that I should look a much older man than I did, if I was not a remarkably good-tempered one, and took things as they came: he concluded that I had been in difficulties all my life, and I permitted him to retain the belief. Then a young Dyak lady of Lingga, whom I had not met for some years, observed, after a few preliminary remarks, "Ah, since seeing you I have had two children; but I always bear you in remembrance, as your image rests on the

top of my head, and whether you are in this country or living at the edge of the sky, it is the same, for we cannot forget each other." I received this remark as a true image from the heart, as she had always been my very affectionate admirer, as I was hers.

Lela Pelawan, of Lingga, was also present. He complained, in a deprecating tone, that the times were hard with him. He had ever been a spendthrift, and was always badly off for every necessary of life, but yet one of those individuals whose very failings assisted to attach him to one: he never thought of his cash until some wise steward had deprived him of it all; and never saw a danger before he was in the very heart of it. Lela Pelawan deprecated our system of free trade, as he said he could not obtain padi from the Dyaks at his own price, and was obliged to pay any exorbitant sum they demanded. He expressed himself strongly, though good-naturedly, that this had not been the custom of his forefathers, and was therefore wrong, as the Malays suffered much inconvenience from it. "You," he added, "must either give me padi or money, for I am so poor I shall appear a disgrace to your name as being one of your people." This news of the increasing independence of the Dyaks was very satisfactory to my ears, as it showed it was no longer in the power of the Malays to oppress

them. So Lela Pelawan had a few dollars presented to him, which I felt sure would be in some one else's keeping in a few hours. I may add, that this poor man, although the head man of a country, was a very hen-pecked husband; for his wife, as I know, had a most terrific temper, and most of the cases brought before him for settlement were summarily decided by her arbitrary rule.

The police and fort-men that we have been in the habit of employing, have been principally the people of the country, sometimes also Javanese and Boyans; but I have found the latter two classes of men to be exceedingly slow and stupid, and far less plucky than our inhabitants; in fact, there is no doubt that Dyaks would become unequalled soldiers for these climes—quick of comprehension as they are, in muscle wiry to a degree, and capable of endurance under any difficulties. They would, when properly drilled and disciplined, make a most valuable military force. But there are difficulties, and the greatest is that they are by nature exceedingly stubborn, perverse, and sulky. Such qualities demand extra care and kindness, though the temper would be of extra value when moulded into shape, with its rough edges filed down.

A strange custom prevails among the Sadong Dyaks, but has not been practised of late years. A request

was brought to me to stop for good such an absurd anomaly. Two branch tribes of the same river, named Engkroh and Engrat, had been for many years on terms of hostility, but for the last three they had made peace. A Malay chief, who was staying with the Engkrohs, told me he saw a large force of armed men advancing towards the Engkrohs' houses. These he found to be the Engrats, who immediately proceeded to cut down fruit-trees, and to rush into houses, carrying away and destroying everything they could lay hands on. The Engkroh people sat quietly witnessing the scene of the devastation of their property. After a while, the Engrats went away again, and then the Malay inquired the cause of this sudden and destructive proceeding. He was informed that it was merely an old-established custom for each tribe to do so *once* to each other after peace had been concluded. The Engkrohs now were entitled to retaliate, and help themselves to the goods of the Engrats. As this practice had been almost obsolete for many years, and without doubt was better sleeping with their forefathers, an order was sent to the Engrat people to refund the property taken, and likewise to pay a small fine in the stead of things lost or damaged.

The Dyaks have a great admiration for a man who talks fluently and well; and it is common with them

to comment critically on these points. For instance, they would say, "He can't talk—he knows nothing!" "He is clever in speech: we are fond of hearing him." Some of their best orators are copious in drawing comparisons, and making compliments as flowery as some of the speeches in the "Arabian Nights." Thus—"The heart is as large as the highest mountain, and as brave as the beasts that live thereon; your eyes only to be compared to the sparkling rays of the sun; your thoughts equal the purity of the stream passing over gravelly beds; and your wisdom is like the fertility of the richest soil." However, these preludes to speech are being rapidly curtailed; and in Court, if an old chief begins with the flowery oratory on which he prides himself so much, people (particularly myself) ask him to be kind enough to favour his audience with the fruit without the flowers, or the contents without the shells, or words from the heart in preference to those from the mouth only; even then, it is sufficiently difficult to understand and follow the thread of many old cases whose history runs through all sorts of tortuous branches on every side for generations.

December, 1859.—I must here relate two proceedings in which I took a very important part, namely, the marriages of two Seriffs, or descendants of the Prophet.

The first was engaged to a daughter of the old Seriff Mullah, with whose family I had for many years been intimately acquainted. One of these pretty damsels was now engaged to another Seriff, as they are not permitted, according to custom, to be joined in holy matrimony to any person of lower degree. Her betrothed had arranged to start, on the night the ceremony was to take place, from the fort. Abang Aing and myself were requested to give the bridegroom away, according to their custom. The evening came. Fantastical branch candelabras were arranged, and flambeaux blazed in a long procession. The bridegroom had been dressed in the choicest habiliments of an Arab, before the looking-glass in my bed-room. Guns were fired, and we proceeded to the house of the bride. On arriving there, mats were tastefully arranged, and curtains closed off certain parts of the house. Near the doorway a small square mat was placed, on which the bridegroom squatted; then the principals of the proceedings sat around. The old Seriff Mullah took the bridegroom's hand, and repeated the marriage-contract, namely, that he had received such a one for wife, with an engagement to pay thirty slaves as dowry. Besides this, there were many words in Arabic, which I did not understand. A devout prayer followed, during which all except myself re-

sponded piously. The Seriff Mullah then slipped past to the bride's apartments, and Abang Aing taking one arm of the bridegroom, and I the other, we marched him up through a large concourse of people, and seated him on the bed of the bride, who was there bedecked in bridal costume, consisting of gold-spangled clothes folded all over her, with a coronet of white flowers on her head. We sat on the decorated platform also for a few minutes; it was grandly embellished with tinsel-work and chintz of various colours; candles and torches were burning in every direction. The Seriff Mullah repeated a few words of prayer, the bridegroom placed his hand on the bride's head, and the ceremony was consummated—the curtain fell. After this, viands of various sorts appeared, for which the old Seriff Mullah had been anxiously waiting for a length of time, and was in a sad humour in consequence. He now brightened up and called his next neighbour a fool, asking him if he felt hungry. We all went to work eating rice, venison and fowls, cooked exceedingly well and tastily stuffed; then came sweets and coffee, followed by cigars. The Seripas, or females of the Seriff's families, were sitting just behind, nudging me continually, telling me not to be shamefaced, but eat till I was full, and as a recommendation they added, "We made all those things with our own fingers."

One speaking too loud for propriety, called down a stern rebuke from the old father, who said, "Instead of talking so loud behind the curtain, you had better come out and sit down and behave yourselves properly," which advice the youngest followed. She was the prettiest one, too, nearly as fair as a European, and I believe, if dressed in European clothes, might have passed as one. At a late hour we marched home together, and that night I dreamt of Seripas. I pitied them for the laws which only permit them to marry with their own class or rank; the result is, they often fail to get husbands at all, or at any rate, legitimate ones.

The next marriage took place a short while afterwards, when I acted the same happy and important part, and disported myself on the bride's bed for a considerable time, among many devout Mahomedans in a blaze of light. My presence there did not cause me to be a worse Christian, or them to depart from any of their Mahomedan rites and usages. It is a pity such compliances cannot take place oftener, and that more good feeling is not displayed between people holding these two apparently antagonistic creeds. I don't believe fanaticism is so present in the Mahomedan religion as people suppose. The impression or feeling is more one of jealousy in their minds towards

white men, and the Christian too often evinces a triumphant bearing of pity, tinctured with contempt, towards Mahomedans. I must say I have always found the latter willing to converse freely and rationally on the different points of their religion, acknowledging Christ as one of the prophets, inferior only to Mahomet and a few others. They are a happy set among themselves; but ignorance is their bane, and their creed does not encourage mental culture. But does any religion permit and direct a teaching to be strictly impartial, even at home? The student, who is told to inquire for himself, has always had the letter laid down to the greatest nicety, and any deviation from its written code is severely deprecated and condemned.

END OF VOL. I.

BRADBURY, EVANS, AND CO., PRINTERS, WHITEFRIARS.

00060508

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018